COMPOSITIO MATHEMATICA

The logarithmic Picard group and its tropicalization

Samouil Molcho and Jonathan Wise

Compositio Math. **158** (2022), 1477–1562.

doi:10.1112/S0010437X22007527

FOUNDATION COMPOSITIO MATHEMATICA

LONDON MATHEMATICAL SOCIETY
EST. 1865

Compositio Math. 158 (2022) 1477–1562
doi:10.1112/S0010437X22007527

The logarithmic Picard group and its tropicalization

Samouil Molcho and Jonathan Wise

Abstract

We construct the logarithmic and tropical Picard groups of a family of logarithmic curves and realize the latter as the quotient of the former by the algebraic Jacobian. We show that the logarithmic Jacobian is a proper family of logarithmic abelian varieties over the moduli space of Deligne–Mumford stable curves, but does not possess an underlying algebraic stack. However, the logarithmic Picard group does have logarithmic modifications that are representable by logarithmic schemes, all of which are obtained by pullback from subdivisions of the tropical Picard group.

Contents

Received 25 December 2019, accepted in final form 14 December 2021, published online 9 September 2022.
2020 Mathematics Subject Classification 14A21, 14C22, 14H40, 14T10 (primary), 14C20, 14D20, 14D23, 14H10, 14K30 (secondary).
Keywords: logarithmic geometry, tropical geometry, Picard group, Jacobian, algebraic curves.

1. Introduction

Our concern in this paper is the extension of the universal Picard group to the boundary of the Deligne–Mumford moduli space of stable curves. Over the interior, the Picard group of a smooth, proper, connected curve is well known to be an extension of the integers by a smooth, proper, connected, commutative group scheme, the Jacobian. These properties do not persist over the boundary, and natural variants sacrifice one or another of them to obtain others.

The Deligne–Mumford compactification of the moduli space of curves admits curves with nodal singularities. As long as the dual graph of the curve is a tree, the Picard group remains an extension of a discrete, free abelian group – the group of multidegrees – by an abelian variety, but it becomes nonseparated in families because the multidegrees do. One can focus here on the component of multidegree 0, which is an abelian variety and is well behaved in families.

Should a curve degenerate so that its dual graph contains nontrivial loops, the multidegree-0 component of the Picard group remains separated, but fails to be universally closed. The construction of compactifications of this group is the subject of a vast literature [Ish78, D'S79, OS79, AK80, AK79, Kaj93, Cap94, Pan96, Jar00, Est01, Cap08a, Cap08b, Mel11, Chi15], of which the above references are only a sample. We must direct the reader to the references for a history of the subject.

While we do not attempt to summarize all of the different approaches to compactifying the Picard group, we emphasize that all operate in the category of schemes, and none produces a proper group scheme. Indeed, it is not possible to produce a proper group scheme, for the multidegree-0 component of the Picard group of a maximally degenerate curve is a torus, and there is no way of completing a torus to a proper group *scheme*.

On the other hand, K. Kato observed that the multiplicative group does have compactifications – with group structure – in the category of *logarithmic* schemes [Kat, § 2.1]. This gives reason to hope that the Picard group might also find a natural compactification in the category of logarithmic schemes, as Kato himself anticipated. Kato proposed a definition for, and then

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

calculated, the logarithmic Picard group of the Tate curve [Kat, § 2.2.4]. Illusie advanced the natural generalization of Kato's calculation as a definition for the Picard group of an arbitrary logarithmic scheme [Ill94, § 3.3]. In the analytic category, Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama constructed the logarithmic Picard group using Hodge-theoretic methods [KKN08a]. Significantly, they discovered the need to restrict attention to a subfunctor of the one defined by Illusie in order to get the logarithmic Picard group, and logarithmic abelian varieties in general, to vary well geometrically over logarithmic base schemes. In the present work, we work entirely in the algebraic category – but the condition of Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama, which appears here under the heading of *bounded monodromy*, first introduced in § 3.5, will play an essential role throughout.

The provenance of logarithmic geometry. This section is intended to motivate the presence of logarithmic geometry in the compactification of the Picard group. Consider a family of logarithmic curves X over a one-parameter base S with generic point η and a line bundle L_η on the general fiber of X. Let $i : s \to S$ denote the inclusion of the closed point and also write $i : X_s \to X$ for the inclusion of the closed fiber; write $j : \eta \to S$ and $j : X_\eta \to X$ for the inclusion of the generic point and the generic fiber.

Let $\mathscr{S}$ denote the ringed space $(s, i^{-1} j_* \mathcal{O}_\eta)$ and let $\mathscr{X}$ denote the ringed space $(X_s, i^{-1} j_* \mathcal{O}_{X_\eta})$. Then $\mathscr{L} = i^{-1} j_* L_\eta$ is a line bundle on $\mathscr{X}$.

We can describe $\mathscr{L}$ by giving local trivializations and transition functions in $\mathbf{G}_m$. However, these cannot necessarily be restricted to X_s because a unit of $i^{-1} j_* \mathcal{O}^*_{X_\eta}$ may have zeros or poles along components of the special fiber.

If the dual graph of X_s is a tree then it is possible to modify the local trivializations to ensure that the transition functions have no zeros or poles, but in general such a modification may not exist.

The degeneration of transition functions suggests we might compactify the Picard group by allowing 'line bundles' whose transition functions are sometimes allowed to vanish or have poles. If transition functions are thus permitted not to take values in a group then the objects assembled from them will no longer have a group structure. However, this leads naturally to the consideration of rank-1, torsion-free sheaves.

Logarithmic geometry takes a different approach to the same idea. Instead of keeping track of only the zeros and poles of the transition functions, we instead keep track of their orders of vanishing and leading coefficients. Together, order of vanishing and leading coefficient have the structure of a group and therefore the objects glued with transition functions in this group can be organized into a group as well.

The way this is actually done is to take the image of a transition function $f \in i^{-1} j_* \mathcal{O}^*_{X_\eta}$, not in $\mathcal{O}_{X_s} \cup \{\infty\}$, but instead in

$$M^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_s} = i^{-1} j_* \mathcal{O}^*_{X_\eta} / \ker(i^{-1} \mathcal{O}^*_X \to \mathcal{O}^*_{X_s})$$

That is, we obtain a natural limit $M^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_s}$-torsor P for L_η, whose isomorphism class lies in $H^1(X_s, M^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_s})$.

Taking transition functions in M_{X_s} has an added benefit, even when the dual graph of the special fiber is a tree. Indeed, if L_η extends to L with limit L_s, one can always produce another limit $L(D)_s$ by twisting L_s by a component D of the special fiber. But the effect of twisting by D on $\mathscr{L}$ is to modify the local trivializations of $\mathscr{L}$ by units of $\mathcal{O}_{X_\eta}$. This changes the local trivializations of P by elements of $M^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_s}$, but that only affects a cocycle representative by a coboundary. In other words, the class of P in $H^1(X_s, M_{X_s}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is independent of twisting by components of X_s.

Logarithmic line bundles. It is sensible to take M_X^{gp}-torsors as a candidate for a compactification of $\mathcal{O}_X^*$ in general, even when the base S of the family is an arbitrary logarithmic scheme. In this paper, we use this observation to define logarithmic line bundles on a family of logarithmic curves $X \to S$ as torsors under the logarithmic multiplicative group, as Kato and Illusie proposed, that satisfy the additional bounded monodromy condition. This definition produces a stack $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ – the logarithmic Picard stack – with respect to the strict étale topology on S, and an associated sheaf $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ – the logarithmic Picard group – via rigidification. In § 4.18 we explain why the bounded monodromy condition is necessary if infinitesimal deformation of logarithmic line bundles is to have the expected relationship to formal families of logarithmic line bundles. Thus, the bounded monodromy condition can be considered to be the first subtlety of the theory. The second subtlety is that even with this condition, the logarithmic Picard stack and the logarithmic Picard group are not representable by an algebraic stack or algebraic space with a logarithmic structure, respectively. The reason is essentially that the logarithmic multiplicative group is *itself* not representable (see § 2.2.7). Nevertheless, $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ and $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ do have all the formal properties of an algebraic stack and an algebraic space, albeit only in the logarithmic category. Specifically, $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ has a *logarithmically* étale cover by a logarithmic scheme, and we prove that it is a smooth algebraic group object in the category of logarithmic schemes, with proper components.

THEOREM A. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. The logarithmic Picard group $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ has a logarithmically smooth cover by a logarithmic scheme, is logarithmically smooth with proper components, is a commutative group object, has finite diagonal, and contains $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ as a subgroup.*

Proof. See Corollary 4.11.4 for the existence of a logarithmically smooth cover, Theorem 4.13.1 for the logarithmic smoothness, Corollary 4.12.5 for the properness, and Theorem 4.12.1 for the finiteness of the diagonal. The group structure and inclusion of $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ are immediate from the construction in Definition 4.1. □

COROLLARY B. *The logarithmic Jacobian is a logarithmic abelian variety, in the sense of Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama [KKN08c, KKN08b].*

Proof. See Theorem 4.15.7. □

Our results for the logarithmic Picard *stack*, which remembers automorphisms, are similar, but a bit more technical.

THEOREM C. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. The logarithmic Picard stack $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ has a logarithmically smooth cover by a logarithmic scheme and its diagonal is representable by logarithmic spaces (sheaves with logarithmically smooth covers by logarithmic schemes). The logarithmic Picard stack is logarithmically smooth and proper, is a commutative group stack, and receives a canonical homomorphism from the algebraic stack $\mathbf{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$.*

Proof. See Theorem 4.11.2 for the existence of a logarithmically smooth cover and Corollary 4.11.5 for the claim about the diagonal. The logarithmic smoothness is proved in Theorem 4.13.1 and the properness is Corollary 4.12.5. The group structure and the map from $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ come directly from Definition 4.1. □

The difference between Theorems A and C and Olsson's result [Ols04, Theorem 4.4] is that Olsson works with a fixed logarithmic structure on the base while we allow the logarithmic structure to vary. This is necessary for the logarithmic Picard group to be proper. Our method of proof also differs from Olsson's: we do not rely on the Artin–Schlessinger representability criteria (for which there is not yet an analogue in logarithmic geometry) and instead construct logarithmically smooth covers directly.

Connection with tropical geometry. Our analysis of the logarithmic Picard group, and our construction of the covers invoked in Theorems A and C, are direct: we do not rely on general representability criteria, nor the theory of logarithmic 1-motifs. Instead, our main tool is the intimate connection between algebraic, logarithmic, and tropical geometry. This connection with tropical geometry is in our view a significant advantage, and perhaps the central point of this paper. From a strictly algebraic perspective **Log Pic** and Log Pic may be mysterious objects, lying outside the province of algebraic geometry. However, the logarithmic perspective affords them a modular description and a *tropicalization* – which has a modular description of its own – that precisely control and explain our transgression beyond the boundaries of algebraic geometry.

We are not the first to observe a connection between the logarithmic Picard group and tropical geometry: indeed, Foster, Ranganathan, Talpo, and Ulirsch observed that the geometry of the logarithmic Picard group is intimately tied up with the geometry of the tropical Picard group [FRTU16], and the connection can also be seen in Kajiwara's work [Kaj93], albeit without explicit mention of tropical geometry. Our main contribution here is perhaps to extend the connection to a family of logarithmic curves over an arbitrary base.

A tropical curve is simply a metric graph. Baker and Norine introduced the tropical Jacobian as a quotient of tropical divisors by linear equivalence [BN07]. At first, the tropical Jacobian of a fixed graph (not yet metrized) was only a finite set, but subdivision of the graph suggests the presence of a finer geometric structure. This was explained by Gathmann and Kerber [GK08], who extended Baker and Norine's results to metric graphs, and Amini and Caporaso added a vertex weighting [AC13]. Mikhalkin and Zharkov defined tropical line bundles as torsors under a suitably defined sheaf of linear functions on a tropical curve [MZ08, Definition 4.5]. They gave a separate definition of the tropical Jacobian as a quotient of a vector space by a lattice [MZ08, § 6.1], and proved an analogue of the Abel–Jacobi theorem, showing that the tropical Jacobian parameterizes tropical line bundles of degree 0. We will recover this result in Corollary 3.4.8.

In order to relate the tropical Picard group and tropical Jacobian to their logarithmic analogues, we require a formalism by which tropical data may vary over a logarithmic base scheme. This formalism is supplied by Cavalieri, Chan, Ulirsch, and the second author [CCUW20, § 5], who allow an arbitrary partially ordered abelian group to stand in for the real numbers in the definition of a tropical curve as a metric graph. Logarithmic schemes come equipped with sheaves of partially ordered abelian groups and one can therefore speak of tropical curves over logarithmic base schemes. We summarize these ideas in §§ 2.3.1–2.3.3. In a nutshell, given a logarithmic curve $X \to S$, we obtain a family of tropical curves $\mathscr{X}$ over S, whose fiber over a geometric point $s \in S$ is the dual graph of X_s, metrized by the characteristic monoid $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{S,s}$ of the logarithmic structure at s. We call the family $\mathscr{X}$ the tropicalization of X/S. The family $\mathscr{X}$, although an object over an arbitrary logarithmic scheme S, is essentially a combinatorial object: the logarithmic scheme S has a stratification on which the characteristic monoid $\overline{M}_S$ is constant, and the fibers of $\mathscr{X}$ are constant on each stratum. The tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$ can thus be thought of as a combinatorial shadow of X/S, which remembers the combinatorics of the irreducible components of each fiber, and how the nodes of each fiber deform as one moves along strata of S.

However, the connection of X/S with $\mathscr{X}$ only comes to life after we begin doing some geometry on $\mathscr{X}$. Indeed, two of the most crucial constructions of the paper occur in § 3, where we define a topology, and sheaves PL and L of piecewise linear and linear functions respectively on $\mathscr{X}$, over an arbitrary base S. This allows us, so to speak, to do some honest tropical *geometry* on $\mathscr{X}$.

Our sheaf PL is different from the sheaves of piecewise linear functions that are usually encountered in tropical geometry in that our piecewise linear functions are allowed to take values in a group $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ of arbitrary finite rank instead of the integers or real numbers. The groups $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that appear vary over points of S, but are essentially the groups of sections of $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ over appropriately small neighborhoods around each point of S. This is the formalism that allows us to capture the fact that X varies over a logarithmic base scheme S instead of being the total space of a one-parameter degeneration. The sheaf of linear functions is built from PL by imposing the analogue of the *balancing condition* that is ubiquitous in tropical geometry.

We use the sheaf L to define the tropical Picard group $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ and Picard stack $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ over logarithmic bases. We define them as the sheaf or stack of *tropical line bundles*, which are the bounded monodromy torsors under L. The sheaf $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ and stack $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ are combinatorial objects, which in practice are simple to compute. For example, one still has a formula for the tropical Jacobian analogous to the formula of [MZ08], which, over a point $s \in S$, takes the form

$$\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}_s/s) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_s, \overline{M}_{S,s}^{\mathrm{gp}}))^{\dagger}/H_1(\mathscr{X}_s). \tag{1.1}$$

Here the † symbol indicates the bounded monodromy condition, which has a simple description in terms of the above formula: every loop γ in the homology of the tropical curve $\mathscr{X}_s$ has a length $\ell(\gamma)$ valued in the monoid $\overline{M}_{S,s}$, and a homomorphism in $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_s, \overline{M}_{S,s}^{\mathrm{gp}}))$ has bounded monodromy if it sends every loop to an element of $\overline{M}_{S,s}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that is bounded by some multiple of the length of the loop. This has the effect that if one generizes from a point s to a point t, smoothing some of the nodes of the curve X_s, and therefore contracting some edges in $\mathscr{X}_s$, the homomorphism descends to be well defined on the homology of $\mathscr{X}_t$. We refer the reader to § 3 for a thorough explanation of this phenomenon and the rest of the terms appearing in the definition of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$. We note also that when we are working with a one-parameter degeneration of a curve, the group $\overline{M}_{S,s}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ reduces to $\mathbf{R}$, the bounded monodromy condition is automatic, and our formula recovers the [MZ08] formula.

The connection with the theory of tropical divisors is also simple: the sheaves of linear and piecewise linear functions fit into an exact sequence

$$0 \to \mathsf{L} \to \mathsf{PL} \to \mathsf{V} \to 0 \tag{1.2}$$

with V the sheaf of tropical divisors. Thus, each tropical divisor D determines a tropical line bundle $\mathsf{L}(D)$, which is the L-torsor describing the obstruction of lifting D to a piecewise linear function whose bend locus is D. It is shown in § 3.5 that, if the base S is a valuation ring of arbitrary rank, $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is precisely the group of tropical divisors on all semistable models (that is, subdivisions) of $\mathscr{X}$, up to piecewise linear functions. This gives another interpretation of the bounded monodromy condition in the valuative case, as those torsors that can be represented by a divisor on a semistable model; but for general S, the group $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ may be larger, with additional torsors that correspond to divisors on semistable models of $\mathscr{X}$ over logarithmic modifications of S as well.

The presentation (1.1), and the exact sequence (1.2), describe two different means of producing tropical line bundles: from local systems and from tropical divisors. The relationship between

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

these is encoded in diagram (3.4.1). The referee pointed out to us that this gives a compelling third method of producing tropical line bundles, from a labeling of the *edges* of the tropical curve by integers (see § 4.5).

The connection of the tropical picture with logarithmic geometry is obtained through the process of *tropicalization*. We do not attempt to explain this in the introduction, but we mention that the germ of the idea is elementary, utilizing the following formula, which is valid for every geometric point $s \in S$:

$$H^i(X_s, \overline{M}_{X,s}) = H^i(\mathscr{X}_s, \mathsf{PL}_{\mathscr{X}_s}).$$

Thus, in a sense, $\mathscr{X}$ and PL together capture all information of X/S that is reflected in $\overline{M}_X$.

The connection between M_X^{gp} and the sheaf of linear functions, L, and the connection between logarithmic line bundles and tropical line bundles, are more subtle. In § 4.14 we observe that the sheaf V is the tropicalization of the Néron–Severi group: while the Néron–Severi group is only a presheaf on X, it descends to a sheaf on the tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$. We obtain a tropicalization map $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ from a morphism of complexes of presheaves $M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to [\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{NS}]$ that is derived from the fundamental exact sequence of logarithmic geometry:

$$0 \to \mathcal{O}_X^* \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \tag{1.3}$$

Theorem D. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S and let $\mathscr{X}$ be its tropicalization. There is an exact sequence*

$$0 \to \mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0$$

There is also an exact sequence of group stacks

$$0 \to \mathbf{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0$$

Here the symbol [0] denotes the multidegree-0 part of Pic. This is an instance where the connection between algebraic, logarithmic, and tropical geometry becomes exceptionally transparent. The tropicalization morphism $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ allows us to understand $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ in terms of a simple combinatorial object and a classical algebro-geometric object, the semiabelian scheme $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$. The tropicalization morphism also allows us to identify the combinatorial data associated with $\mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ necessary to construct proper, schematic compactifications of the Picard group, following Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama [Kaj93, KKN15], in § 4.17.

Theorem E. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S with tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$. Polyhedral subdivisions of* $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ *correspond to toroidal compactifications of* $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$.

The exact sequences of Theorem D are also needed in our demonstrations of Theorems A and C, particularly in the demonstration of the boundedness of **Log Pic** and its diagonal. The tropical boundedness statements, proved in §§ 3.10 and 3.11, are surely the most technical parts of the paper, and were the most difficult parts for us. We rely on what might be called an 'arithmetic ϵ–δ' formalism, in which ϵ and δ take values in a monoid; one cannot simply 'choose $\delta > 0$' but must choose it from the monoid of available positive elements of the monoid.

Invariance properties and construction of the cover. Polyhedral subdivisions of $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ yield toroidal compactifications of $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$, which can in turn be interpreted as *logarithmic modifications* of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$. Logarithmic modifications, together with logarithmic root stacks, are purely combinatorial operations yielding proper monomorphisms of logarithmic schemes.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Together with étale maps, the two operations generate the (full) *logarithmic étale topology* of a logarithmic scheme. Logarithmic modifications, and similarly roots, form an inverse system, where $f_2 : X_2 \to X$ can be considered finer than $f_1 : X_1 \to X$ if f_2 factors as $g \circ f_1$ for a log modification $g : X_2 \to X_1$. Thus, Theorem E can be seen as a heuristic 'formula':

$$\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) = \varinjlim\{\text{toroidal compactifications of } \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)\}.$$

Of course, this colimit does not exist as a scheme, but logarithmically it expresses $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ as the colimit of all its logarithmic modifications – the minimal toroidal compactification of $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$, so to speak.

One of the remarkable properties of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is that it is often invariant under both logarithmic modifications and root constructions: suppose that S is logarithmically flat and that $f : T \to S$ is a logarithmic modification or a root S, and Y is a logarithmic modification or root of the pullback of X on T, for which $Y \to T$ is a logarithmic curve. Then $f^* \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S) = \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T)$. In particular, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ forms a sheaf for the (small) full logarithmic étale topology on S: see Corollary 4.4.14.2. This invariance, together with the fundamental exact sequence, allows us to relate $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ with *all* Picard groups $\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T)$ of all semistable models Y of X over logarithmic modifications and roots T of S, by combining the natural map $\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T) \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T)$ with the isomorphism to $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$. In fact, it is this collection of spaces $\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T)$ that provides the cover in Theorem A. As the kernel of the map $\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T) \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(Y/T)$ is precisely the group of piecewise linear functions on the tropicalization of Y/T, we can write another heuristic 'formula',

$$\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S) = \varinjlim \operatorname{Pic}(Y)/\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y}),$$

with $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y})$ denoting the piecewise linear functions on the tropicalization of Y. The map $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y}) \to \operatorname{Pic}(Y)$ comes from the fundamental exact sequence (1.3).

With the benefit of hindsight, this formula could have been used as a definition of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ (at least over a logarithmically flat base): as line bundles on semistable models of X/S, up to the equivalence relation generated by pulling back to a further semistable model and the action of piecewise linear functions. In our point of view, this presentation of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is an extrinsic presentation, whereas the definition we have chosen, in terms of torsors, is intrinsic.

This intrinsic/extrinsic interplay is now seen in multiple places in logarithmic geometry. For example, it is observed in logarithmic Gromov–Witten theory, where an 'intrinsic' definition of logarithmic stable maps is given by [Che14, AC14, GS13], whereas an extrinsic definition is given in the work of [Li01, Li02, Kim10, Ran20]. In the stable map setting, the different definitions produce different spaces; yet, their Gromov–Witten invariants coincide. This is an incarnation of the principle that logarithmic geometry captures the geometry of the interior of a space, and not of the specific logarithmic compactification chosen. Remarkably, for Log Pic, both intrinsic and extrinsic approaches yield the same space in many cases (rather than the same invariants of the space). This property has proved to be very useful in the study of Log Pic; it is, for example, key in the construction of a principal polarization, or in the study of Néron models via Log Pic. In recent years, various central problems in logarithmic geometry have been studied, using either an intrinsic or extrinsic approach – for example, Chow theory for logarithmic schemes (by Barrott extrinsically [Bar20], or Herr intrinsically [Her19]) or Donaldson–Thomas theory ([MR20], extrinsically). We expect that understanding the connection between the dual approaches in any given problem will prove to be very fruitful.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Future work. The Jacobian (and even the Picard stack) is equipped with a canonical principal polarization. We are mute about the logarithmic analogue in this paper, but we will construct it in a subsequent one.

Our results are limited to relative dimension 1 because we do not yet have the means to study families of tropical varieties of higher dimension over logarithmic bases. We also do not yet understand the higher-dimensional analogue of the bounded monodromy condition.

Neither have we addressed any algebraicity properties of the tropical Picard group in a systematic way. It follows from our results that the tropical Picard group has a logarithmically étale cover by a Kato fan, but it is less clear how one should characterize its diagonal (we prove only that it is quasicompact here), or whether one should demand further properties of a purely tropical cover.

In § 4.17, we indicate how the tropical Picard group can be used to construct proper schematic models of the logarithmic Picard group over a local base. Recent work of Abreu and Pacini describes polyhedral subdivisions of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ when $\mathscr{X}$ is the universal curve over the moduli space of 1-pointed tropical curves (and, for certain degrees, over the moduli space of unpointed tropical curves) [AP20]. They show that the corresponding compactification of the Picard group coincides with Esteves's compactification [Est01]. We are pursuing a global construction of more general toroidal compactifications over the moduli space of stable curves in collaboration with Melo, Ulirsch, and Viviani.

The tropicalization method used in § 4.14 appears to generalize well to higher-dimensional logarithmic varieties. We hope to make further use of this construction in the future.

Conventions. Let X be a curve over S. We use the term 'Picard group' to refer to the sheaf on S of isomorphism classes of line bundles on X, up to isomorphism, and denote it $\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$. The stack of $\mathbf{G}_m$-torsors on X is denoted in boldface: $\mathbf{Pic}(X/S)$. We use a superscript to denote a restriction on degree, and we refer to $\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ as the Jacobian of X. We apply similar terminology when X is a logarithmic curve or tropical curve over a logarithmic base S.

Throughout, we consider a logarithmic curve X over S. We regularly use $\pi : X \to S$ to denote the projection.

2. Monoids, logarithmic structures, and tropical geometry

2.1 Monoids

In this paper, all monoids will be commutative, unital, integral, and saturated, although some results in this section are valid without those assumptions. The monoid operation will be written additively, unless indicated otherwise. Homomorphisms of monoids are assumed to preserve the unit.

2.1.1 *Partially ordered groups.*

Definition 2.1.1.1. A homomorphism of monoids $f : N \to M$ is called *sharp* if each invertible element of M has a unique preimage under f. A monoid M is called *sharp* if the unique homomorphism $0 \to M$ is sharp.

Remark 2.1.1.2. Our definition is different from the one given in [Ogu18, 4.1.1]; it is equivalent to the *logarithmic* homomorphisms of [Ogu18].

We write M^* for the subgroup of invertible elements of M and $\overline{M}$ for the quotient M/M^*, which we call the *sharpening* of M. Even when they do not arise as sharpenings of other monoids, we often notate sharp monoids with a bar above them.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Remark 2.1.1.3. A homomorphism $f : N \to M$ of sharp monoids is sharp if and only if $f^{-1}\{0\} = \{0\}$. Note that f^{gp} need not necessarily be injective.

In this situation, sharp homomorphisms are analogous to local homomorphisms of local rings, and some authors prefer to call sharp homomorphisms between sharp monoids *local*. We will favor 'sharp' in order not to create a conflict with connections to topology to be explored elsewhere. Some indications about those connections are given in § 3.11.

Every monoid M is contained in a smallest associated group M^{gp}, and M determines a partial semiorder on M^{gp} in which M is the subset of elements that are ≥ 0. If M is sharp then the semiorder is a partial order. As M can be recovered from the induced partial order on M^{gp}, we are free to think of monoids as partially (semi)ordered groups, and we frequently shall.

2.1.2 *Valuative monoids.*

Definition 2.1.2.1. A *valuative monoid* is an integral[1] monoid M such that, for all $x \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$, either $x \in M$ or $-x \in M$.

If M is an integral monoid, and $x, y \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$, we say that $x \leq y$ if $y - x \in M$. We say that x and y are *comparable* if $x \leq y$ or $y \leq x$.

Lemma 2.1.2.2. *All valuative monoids are saturated.*

Proof. Suppose that M is valuative, $x \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and $nx \in M$. If $x \notin M$ then $-x \in M$. But as $nx \in M$ this means $-x$ is a unit of M, which means that $x \in M$. □

Corollary 2.1.2.3. *All sharp valuative monoids are torsion-free.*

Proof. If $nx = 0$ for some $x \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$, then $x \in M$ since $0 \in M$ and M is saturated. But M is sharp so x must be 0. □

Example 2.1.2.4. The nonnegative elements of $\mathbf{Z}$ and of $\mathbf{R}$ are valuative monoids. More generally, elements that are ≥ 0 in the lexicographic order on $\mathbf{R}^n$ form a valuative monoid, as do the ≥ 0 elements in any subgroup. More generally still, if Ω is a totally ordered set then formal sums of well-ordered subsets of Ω, with real coefficients, form a totally ordered abelian group. The elements ≥ 0 in this group are a valuative monoid, and a theorem of Hahn asserts that all valuative monoids arise as the elements ≥ 0 in a subgroup of such a group [Hah07, § 2].

Remark 2.1.2.5. Finitely generated monoids arise as the monoids of functions on rational polyhedral cones that take integral values on the integral lattice. Monoids that are not finitely generated can nevertheless be approximated by an ascending union of finitely generated monoids. The ascending union corresponds dually to a descending intersection of rational polyhedral cones. This gives a way to visualize valuative monoids inside a real vector space as infinitesimal thickenings of rays in the dual vector space (see Figure 2). This perspective will be important when we study prorepresentability in § 3.9.

The reader who is so inclined may verify that an extension of a finitely generated monoid to a valuative monoid corresponds to a ray in its dual cone, together with a flag of infinitesimal extensions of that ray.

Lemma 2.1.2.6. *Suppose that $f : M \to N$ is a sharp homomorphism of monoids and M is valuative. Then f is injective.*

[1] Despite our convention that all monoids are saturated, we allow valuative monoids not to be saturated *a priori*, since they are so a posteriori.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. Suppose that $x \in M^{gp}$ and $f(x) = 0$. Either $x \in M$ or $-x \in M$. We assume the former without loss of generality. But $0 \in N$ has a unique preimage in M by sharpness, so $x = 0$ and f^{gp} is injective. □

Remark 2.1.2.7. This property is similar to one enjoyed by fields in commutative algebra. Valuative monoids will play a role in tropical geometry analogous to that played by fields in algebraic geometry.

Lemma 2.1.2.8. *Suppose that $f : N \to M$ is a sharp homomorphism of valuative monoids. Then f is an isomorphism if and only if it induces an isomorphism on associated groups.*

Proof. By Lemma 2.1.2.6, we know f is injective, so we replace N by its image and assume f is the inclusion of a submonoid with the same associated group. If $\alpha \in M$ then either α or $-\alpha$ is in N. In the former case we are done, and in the latter, α is an invertible element of M, so $\alpha \in N$ since the inclusion is sharp. □

Definition 2.1.2.9. A homomorphism of monoids $\varrho : N \to M$ is called *relatively valuative* or an *infinitesimal extension* if, whenever $\alpha \in N^{gp}$ and $\varrho(\alpha) \in M$, either $\alpha \in N$ or $-\alpha \in N$.

Lemma 2.1.2.10. *If $\varrho : N \to M$ is relatively valuative and M is valuative then N is valuative.*

Proof. Suppose that $\alpha \in N^{gp}$. Either $\varrho(\alpha) \in M$ or $-\varrho(\alpha) \in M$. In either case, either α or $-\alpha$ is in N, by definition. □

Lemma 2.1.2.11. *Any partial order on an abelian group can be extended to a total order.*

Proof. By Zorn's lemma, every partial order on an abelian group has a maximal extension. Assume, therefore, that $\overline{M}^{gp}$ is a maximal partially ordered abelian group and let $\overline{M} \subset \overline{M}^{gp}$ be the submonoid of elements ≥ 0. Let x be an element of $\overline{M}^{gp}$ that is not in $\overline{M}$. Then $\overline{M}[x]^{sat}$ is the monoid of elements ≥ 0 in a semiorder on $\overline{M}^{gp}$ strictly extending the one corresponding to $\overline{M}$. This semiorder cannot be a partial order because $\overline{M}$ was maximal, so $\overline{M}[x]^{sat}$ cannot be sharp. Therefore, there are some $y, z \in \overline{M}$ and some positive integers n and m such that $(y + nx) + (z + mx) = 0$. That is, $y + z = -(n + m)x$. As $\overline{M}$ is saturated (by its maximality), this implies that $-x \in \overline{M}$, which shows that every $x \in \overline{M}^{gp}$ is either ≥ 0 or ≤ 0. □

Example 2.1.2.12. Suppose that R is a valuation ring. The valuation group of R is a totally ordered abelian group, $\overline{V}^{gp}$, and the valuations of nonzero elements of R are the submonoid of positive elements, $\overline{V} \subset \overline{V}^{gp}$. The ideals, and in particular the prime ideals, of R are totally ordered by inclusion. Therefore, the spectrum of R is totally ordered by the specialization relation.

Now suppose $\overline{M}$ is a finitely generated monoid. Let k be a field and let $X = \operatorname{Spec} k[\overline{M}]$ be the associated affine toric variety. An extension of $\overline{M}$ to a valuative monoid $\overline{V}$ corresponds to an extension of $k[\overline{M}]$ to a valuation ring, R. The dual map $\operatorname{Spec} R \to X$ gives a chain of specializations between generic points of torus-invariant strata in X.

Conversely, one may imagine a complete flag of torus-invariant subspaces $X = X_0 \supset X_1 \supset \cdots$. This corresponds to a sequence of localization homomorphisms $\overline{M} = \overline{M}_0 \to \overline{M}_1 \to \cdots$ such that the kernel of $\overline{M}_\ell^{gp} \to \overline{M}_{\ell+1}^{gp}$ is isomorphic to $\mathbf{Z}$. In fact, the isomorphism to $\mathbf{Z}$ is canonical, because $\overline{M}_\ell \to \overline{M}_{\ell+1}$ is a localization homomorphism, so the kernel contains an element of $\overline{M}_\ell$; we choose the isomorphism to $\mathbf{Z}$ so this element corresponds to a positive element of $\mathbf{Z}$.

Let $p_\ell : \overline{M} \to \overline{M}_\ell$ be the projection. One obtains a valuative monoid extending $\overline{M}$ by including $\alpha \in \overline{M}^{gp}$ in $\overline{V}$ if $\alpha = 0$ or $p_\ell(\alpha)$ is a nonzero element of $\overline{M}_\ell$ for some ℓ. Indeed, suppose that $\alpha \in \overline{M}^{gp}$ is nonzero and select the largest ℓ such that $p_{\ell+1}(\alpha) = 0$. Then $p_\ell(\alpha)$ is a nonzero

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

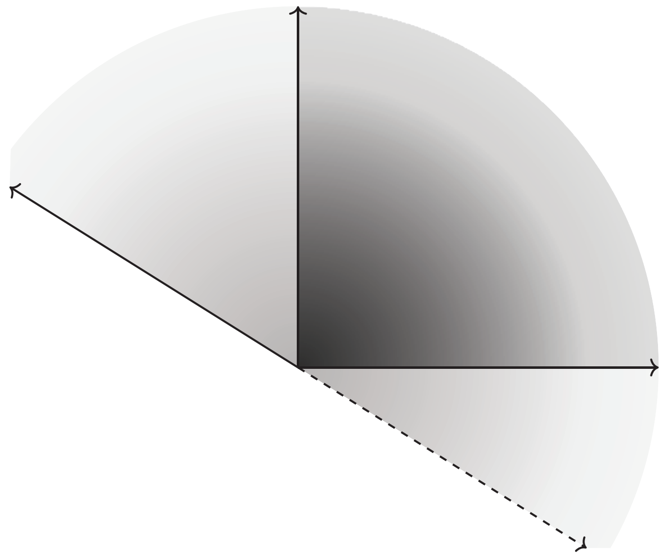


Figure 1. The darker shaded area is the monoid $\mathbf{R}^2_{\geq 0}$ and the lighter shaded area is an extension to a valuative monoid.

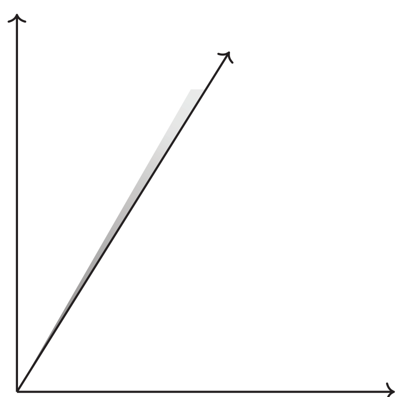


Figure 2. The dual of Figure 1, with respect to the standard Euclidean pairing. Notice that the ray is thickened slightly on one side.

element of $\ker(\overline{M}_\ell^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_{\ell+1}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathbf{Z}$. If $p_\ell(\alpha) > 0$ in $\mathbf{Z}$ then $\alpha \in \overline{V}$, and if $p_\ell(\alpha) < 0$ in $\mathbf{Z}$ then $-\alpha \in \overline{V}$.

Not all valuative extensions of $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ arise this way, although one does get all of the ones where $|R| = \dim X + 1$. For a complete list, one must add limits of affine charts of toric modifications. These correspond to rays of irrational slope in the toric fan, and infinitesimal extensions thereof, in the manner illustrated in Figures 1 and 2 (note that the boundary of the gray region would not contain any lattice points in this case).

2.1.3 *Bounded elements of monoids.*

Definition 2.1.3.1. Suppose that α and δ are elements of a partially ordered abelian group, with $\delta \geq 0$. We will say that α is *bounded* by δ if there are integers m and n such that $m\delta \leq \alpha \leq n\delta$. We write $\alpha \prec \delta$ to indicate that α is bounded by δ.

We say that α is *dominated* by δ, and write $\alpha \ll \delta$, if $n\alpha \leq \delta$ for all integers n.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

LEMMA 2.1.3.2. *Let M be a (saturated) monoid, let $\delta \in M$, and let $\alpha \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Then $\alpha \prec \delta$ in M if and only if $\alpha \prec \delta$ in $\mathbf{Q}M$.*

Proof. If $m\delta \leq \alpha \leq n\delta$ in $\mathbf{Q}M$ then there is a positive integer k such that $k(\alpha - m\delta)$ and $k(n\delta - \alpha)$ are both in M. But M is saturated, so this implies $m\delta \leq \alpha \leq n\delta$, as required. □

LEMMA 2.1.3.3. *Let M be a monoid. Suppose $\delta \in M$. The elements of M^{gp} that are bounded by δ are precisely $M[-\delta]^*$.*

Proof. If $k\delta \leq \alpha \leq \ell\delta$ then $0 \leq \alpha \leq 0$ in the sharpening $\overline{M[-\delta]}$ of $M[-\delta]$ and therefore $\alpha \in M[-\delta]^*$. Conversely, if $\alpha \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a unit of $M[-\delta]$ then there is some $\beta \in M$ such that $\alpha + \beta \in \mathbf{Z}\delta$ – in other words, $\alpha \leq \ell\delta$ for some integer ℓ. Applying the same reasoning to $-\alpha$ supplies an integer k such that $-\alpha \leq k\delta \in M$. Therefore, $-k\delta \leq \alpha \leq \ell\delta$, as required. □

DEFINITION 2.1.3.4. An *archimedean group* is a totally ordered abelian group M^{gp} such that if $x, y \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$ with $x > 0$ then y is bounded by x.

Remark 2.1.3.5. A totally ordered abelian group M^{gp} is archimedean if and only M it has no $\prec$-closed submonoids other than 0 and M^{gp}.

The following theorem is due to Hölder [Höl01], but is also a special case of the theorem of Hahn [Hah07].

THEOREM 2.1.3.6 (Hölder). *Every archimedean group can be embedded by an order-preserving homomorphism into the real numbers. The homomorphism is unique up to scaling.*

Proof. This is trivial for the zero group, so assume M is a nonzero archimedean group. Choose a nonzero element x of M. It will be equivalent to show that there is a unique order-preserving homomorphism $M \to \mathbf{R}$ sending x to 1.

For any $y \in M$, let S be the set of rational numbers p/q such that $px \leq qy$ in M. Let T be the set of rationals p/q such that $px \geq qy$. Then S and T are a Dedekind cut of $\mathbf{Q}$, hence define a unique real number $f(y)$. This proves the uniqueness part.

All that remains is to show that f is a homomorphism. This amounts to the assertion that if $px \leq qy$ and $p'x \leq q'y'$ then $(pq' + p'q)x \leq qq'(y + y')$, which is an immediate verification. □

LEMMA 2.1.3.7. *If x and y are positive elements of a totally ordered abelian group then $x \prec y$ or $y \ll x$.*

Proof. Suppose that y does not bound x. As $x \geq 0$, this means there is no integer such that $x \leq ny$. But the group is totally ordered, so we must therefore have $x \geq ny$ for all n. That is $x \gg y$. □

PROPOSITION 2.1.3.8. *Let M be a valuative monoid. The collection of subsets N of M closed under $\prec$ are submonoids and are totally ordered by inclusion. The graded pieces of this filtration are archimedean.*

Proof. Lemma 2.1.3.3 implies that these subsets are submonoids. Suppose that N and P are $\prec$-closed subgroups and there is some $x \in N$ that is not contained in P. If $y \in P$ then either $y \prec x$ or $x \prec y$ by Lemma 2.1.3.7, but P is $\prec$-closed so it must be the former. Thus, $P \prec x$ so $P \subset N$ since N is $\prec$-closed.

Now suppose that $N \subset P$ and there are no intermediate $\prec$-closed submonoids. The image of P in $P^{\mathrm{gp}}/N^{\mathrm{gp}}$ therefore has no $\prec$-closed submonoids other than 0 and itself, so it is archimedean. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

2.2 Logarithmic structures

We review some of the basics of logarithmic geometry. The canonical reference is Kato's original paper [Kat89].

2.2.1 *Systems of invertible sheaves.* We recall a perspective on logarithmic structures favored by Borne and Vistoli [BV12, Definition 3.1].

Definition 2.2.1.1. Let X be a scheme. A *logarithmic structure* on X is an (integral, saturated) étale sheaf of monoids M_X on X and a sharp homomorphism $\varepsilon : M_X \to \mathcal{O}_X$, the target given its multiplicative monoid structure. The quotient $M_X/\varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_X^*$ is known as the *characteristic monoid* of M_X and is denoted $\overline{M}_X$.

A morphism of logarithmic structures $M_X \to N_X$ is a homomorphism of monoids commuting with the homomorphisms ε.

Let X be a logarithmic scheme. For each local section α of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$, we denote the fiber of M_X over $\overline{M}_X$ by $\mathcal{O}_X^*(-\alpha)$. This is a $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor because M_X^{gp} is an $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor over $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We write $\mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$ for the associated invertible sheaf, obtained by contracting $\mathcal{O}_X^*(-\alpha)$ with $\mathcal{O}_X$ using the action of $\mathcal{O}_X^*$.

We can think of the assignment $\alpha \mapsto \mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$ as a map $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_m$. We have canonical isomorphisms $\mathcal{O}_X(\alpha+\beta) \simeq \mathcal{O}_X(\alpha) \otimes \mathcal{O}_X(\beta)$ making the morphism $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_m$ into a homomorphism of group stacks.

Moreover, if $\alpha \in \overline{M}_X$ then the restriction of ε gives a $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-equivariant map $\mathcal{O}_X^*(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_X$, hence a morphism of invertible sheaves $\mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_X$. If $\beta \geq \alpha$ then $\alpha - \beta \leq 0$ and we obtain $\mathcal{O}_X(\alpha - \beta) \to \mathcal{O}_X$; twisting by $\mathcal{O}_X(\beta)$, we get $\mathcal{O}_X(\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_X(\beta)$.

If we regard $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ as a sheaf of categories over X, with a unique morphism $\alpha \to \beta$ whenever $\alpha \leq \beta$, then the logarithmic structure induces a monoidal functor $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathscr{L}_X$ where $\mathscr{L}_X$ is the stack of invertible sheaves on X. It is clearly possible to recover the original logarithmic structure on X from this monoidal functor, so we often think of logarithmic structures in these terms.

2.2.2 *Coherent logarithmic structures.* Let X be a scheme with a logarithmic structure M_X. If $\overline{N}$ is an (integral, saturated) monoid and $e : \overline{N} \to \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X)$ is a homomorphism, there is an initial logarithmic structure M'_X and morphism $M'_X \to M_X$ such that e factors through $\Gamma(X, \overline{M}'_X) \to \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X)$. If $M'_X \to M_X$ is an isomorphism then $\overline{N}$ and e are called a chart of $\overline{M}_X$.

Definition 2.2.2.1. A logarithmic scheme is a scheme equipped with a logarithmic structure that has étale-local charts by integral, saturated monoids. It is said to be *locally of finite type* if the underlying scheme is locally of finite type and the charts can be chosen to come from finitely generated monoids.

A logarithmic scheme that is locally of finite type comes equipped with a stratification, defined as follows. Assume that M_X has a global chart by a finitely generated monoid $\overline{N}$. For each of the finitely many generators α of $\overline{N}$, the image of the homomorphism $\mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_X$ is an ideal, which determines a closed subset of X. All combinations of intersections and complements of these closed subsets stratify X.

To patch this construction into a global one, we must argue that the stratification defined above does not depend on the choice of chart. To see this, it is sufficient to work locally, and therefore to assume X is the spectrum of a henselian local ring with closed point x. Then the strata correspond to the ideals of the characteristic monoid $\overline{M}_{X,x}$, and are therefore independent of the choice of chart.

On each stratum, the characteristic monoid of X is locally constant.

Definition 2.2.2.2. A logarithmic scheme X of finite type is called *atomic* if $\Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X) \to \overline{M}_{X,x}$ is a bijection for all geometric points of the closed stratum and the closed stratum is connected.

Example 2.2.2.3. An affine toric variety with its canonical logarithmic structure is an atomic neighborhood for its unique closed torus orbit.

Lemma 2.2.2.4. *The closed stratum of an atomic logarithmic scheme X is connected and $\overline{M}_X$ is constant on it.*

Proof. Assume that X is an atomic logarithmic scheme. It is immediate that $\overline{M}_X$ is constant on the closed stratum, for we have a global isomorphism to a constant sheaf there, by definition. □

Proposition 2.2.2.5. *Suppose that X is a logarithmic scheme of finite type. Then X has an étale cover by atomic logarithmic schemes.*

Proof. For each point geometric x of X, choose an étale neighborhood U of x such that $\Gamma(U, \overline{M}_X) \to \overline{M}_{X,x}$ admits a section. This is possible because $\overline{M}_{X,x}$ is finitely generated (because of the existence of charts by finitely generated monoids), hence finitely presented by Rédei's theorem [Gri17, Proposition 9.2]. As $\Gamma(U, \overline{M}_X)$ is finitely generated, $\Gamma(U, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is a finitely generated abelian group, and therefore the kernel of (2.1)

$$\Gamma(U, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to \overline{M}_{X,x}^{\mathrm{gp}} \tag{2.1}$$

is a finitely generated abelian group. By shrinking U, we can therefore ensure it is an isomorphism. Finally, we delete any closed strata of U other than the one containing x. □

2.2.3 *Finite type and finite presentation.* Because we admit logarithmic structures whose underlying monoids are not locally finitely generated, we must adapt the definitions of finite type and finite presentation.

Definition 2.2.3.1. A morphism of logarithmic schemes $f : X \to Y$ is said to be *locally of finite type* if, locally in X and Y, it is possible to construct X relative to Y by adjoining finitely many elements to $\mathcal{O}_Y$ and M_Y, imposing some relations, and then passing to the associated saturated logarithmic structure. It is said to be *locally of finite presentation* if the relations can also be taken to be finite in number.

We say that X is of *finite type* over Y if, in addition to being locally of finite type over Y, it is quasicompact over Y. For *finite presentation*, we require local finite presentation, quasicompactness, and quasiseparatedness.

Lemma 2.2.3.2.

(1) *A logarithmic scheme of finite type over a noetherian scheme (with trivial logarithmic structure) is of finite presentation.*
(2) *A logarithmic scheme of finite type over a logarithmic scheme of finite type is itself of finite type.*

Remark 2.2.3.3. Because we insist on saturated monoids, some unexpected phenomena can occur when working over bases that are not finitely generated. For example, let Y be a punctual logarithmic scheme whose characteristic monoid is the submonoid of $\mathbf{R}^2_{\geq 0}$ consisting of all (a, b) such that $a + b \in \mathbf{Z}$. Let X be the logarithmic scheme obtained from Y by adjoining $(1, -1)$ to the characteristic monoid. This can be effected by adjoining an element γ to M_Y and imposing the relation $\beta\gamma = \alpha$, where α and β are elements of M_Y whose images in $\overline{M}_Y$ are $(1, 0)$ and

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

$(0,1)$, respectively. This requires adjoining $\varepsilon(\gamma)$ to $\mathcal{O}_Y$. In the category of not necessarily saturated logarithmic schemes, this would suffice to construct X with underlying scheme $\mathbf{A}^1 \times Y$.

The monoid $\overline{M}_Y[(1,-1)]$ is not saturated, and the saturation $\overline{M}_X$ involves the adjunction of infinitely many additional elements. Each of these elements requires an image in $\mathcal{O}_X$, and therefore neither the characteristic monoid nor the underlying scheme of X – when working with saturated logarithmic schemes – is finitely generated over Y. However, as a *saturated logarithmic scheme*, X is finitely generated over Y and therefore deserves to be characterized as of finite type.

For further evidence that X should be considered of finite type over Y, suppose that Y admits a morphism to Y' that is an isomorphism on underlying schemes and such that $\overline{M}_{Y'} = \mathbf{N}^2 \subset \mathbf{R}^2$. Then X is the base change of X', which is representable by a logarithmic structure $\mathbf{A}^1 \times Y$ (the construction from the first paragraph produces a saturated logarithmic structure when executed over Y'). The morphism $X' \to Y'$ must certainly be considered of finite type. If finite type is to be a property stable under base change to logarithmic schemes whose logarithmic structures are not necessarily locally finitely generated then we must admit that $X \to Y$ be of finite type as well.

The following characterization of morphisms locally of finite presentation (Lemma 2.2.3.4) gives further justification for our choice of definition (cf. the characterization of morphisms locally of finite presentation in [EGA, IV.8.14.2]). It says, effectively, that to specify a morphism from an arbitrary logarithmic scheme S into a logarithmic scheme X of finite presentation requires only finitely many of the data used to construct S.

Lemma 2.2.3.4. *A morphism of logarithmic schemes $f : X \to Y$ is locally of finite presentation if and only if, for every cofiltered system of affine logarithmic schemes S_i over Y, the map*

$$\varinjlim \mathrm{Hom}_Y(S_i, X) \to \mathrm{Hom}_S(\varprojlim S_i, X) \qquad (2.2.3.4.1)$$

is a bijection.

Proof. First we prove that local finite presentation guarantees that (2.2.3.4.1) is a bijection. We demonstrate only the surjectivity, with the injectivity being similar. Let $S = \varprojlim S_i$ and let $f : S \to X$ be a Y-morphism. Choose covers of X and Y by U_k and V_k such that U_k can be presented with finitely many data and finitely many relations relative to V_k. Since S is affine, it is quasicompact, so finitely many of the U_k suffice to cover the image of S. Let $\{W_k\}$ be a cover S by open affines such that $W_k \subset f^{-1}U_k$ (repeat some of the U_k if $f^{-1}U_k$ is not affine).

The open sets W_k are pulled back from open sets $W_{ik} \subset S_i$ for i sufficiently large, and $S_i = \bigcup W_{ik}$ for i potentially larger. Since U_k can be presented with finitely many data and finitely many relations, the V_k-map $W_k \to U_k$ descends to $W_{ik} \to U_k$ for i sufficiently large. The maps W_{ik} and $W_{i\ell}$ may not agree on their common domain of definition, but we can cover it with finitely many affines (since S_i is quasiseparated) and therefore arrange for agreement when i is sufficiently large. This descends f to S_i.

Now we consider the converse. That is, we assume (2.2.3.4.1) is a bijection for all cofiltered affine systems $\{S_i\}$ and deduce that X can be defined by finitely many data and finitely many relations relative to Y. This assertion is local in X and Y, so we may assume that X and Y are affine and have global charts. We argue first that $\mathcal{O}_X$ and M_X are generated, up to saturation, relative to $\mathcal{O}_Y$ and M_Y by finitely many elements. Indeed, we can write the pair $(\mathcal{O}_X, M_X)$ as a union of finitely generated sublogarithmic structures $(\mathcal{O}_{S_i}, M_{S_i})$. These correspond to maps $S_i \to Y$ and their limit is $X \to Y$. By (2.2.3.4.1), $S_i \to Y$ lifts to X for all sufficiently large i and therefore $(\mathcal{O}_X, M_X) = (\mathcal{O}_{S_i}, M_{S_i})$ for all sufficiently large i. This proves that X is locally of finite type over Y.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Now we check that X can be defined, relative to Y, with only finitely many relations. Let $(\mathcal{O}_{S_0}, M_{S_0})$ be freely generated over $(\mathcal{O}_Y, M_Y)$ by a choice of finitely many generators for $(\mathcal{O}_X, M_X)$. Every finite subset of the relations among those generators determines a quotient $(\mathcal{O}_{S_i}, M_{S_i})$ and a map $S_i \to Y$. For all sufficiently large i, we get a lift to X by (2.2.3.4.1), which means that $S_i = X$ for all sufficiently large i. This completes the proof. □

2.2.4 *Universal surjectivity.*

Definition 2.2.4.1. Let S be a logarithmic scheme. By a *valuative geometric point* of S we will mean a point of S valued in a logarithmic scheme whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field and whose characteristic monoid is valuative.

Proposition 2.2.4.2 (Gillam). *A morphism of logarithmic schemes $f : X \to Y$ is universally surjective if and only if every valuative geometric point of Y can be lifted to a valuative geometric point of X, possibly after enlargement of the residue field and logarithmic structure. If f is of finite type, no enlargement of the residue field is necessary.*

Proof. Suppose first that f is universally surjective. Let $T \to Y$ be a valuative geometric point. Replacing Y by T and X by $X \times_Y T$, we may assume Y is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field k with a valuative logarithmic structure. Since $f : X \to Y$ is surjective, X is nonempty. Therefore, X has a K-point for some extension K of k. Replacing k by K, we may assume X has a k-point, and then replacing X by that point, we may assume X and Y have the same underlying scheme, $\operatorname{Spec} k$. Finally, we use Lemma 2.1.2.11 to embed $\overline{M}_X$ in a valuative monoid and conclude.

Now suppose that $f : X \to Y$ is surjective on valuative geometric points. Then this is also true universally, so it is sufficient to prove that f is surjective and therefore to assume Y is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field. But any monoid can be embedded in a valuative monoid by Lemma 2.1.2.11, so after embedding $\overline{M}_Y$ in a valuative monoid $\overline{N}$ we can construct a morphism $Y' \to Y$, with $\overline{M}_{Y'} = \overline{N}$ valuative, that is an isomorphism on the underlying schemes. Then $X' = X \times_Y Y'$ surjects onto Y' by assumption. As $Y' \to Y$ is surjective, this implies that $X \to Y$ is surjective, as required. □

2.2.5 *Valuative criteria.*

Lemma 2.2.5.1. *Let S be the spectrum of a valuation ring with generic point η and assume that M_η is a logarithmic structure on η. Then there is a maximal logarithmic structure M on S extending M_η such that $M^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_\eta^{\mathrm{gp}}$. The map $\varrho : M \to M_\eta$ is relatively valuative.*

Proof. Let $\varepsilon : M_\eta \to \mathcal{O}_\eta$ be the structure morphism of M_η. Define $M = \varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_S$.

Note that ε restricts to a bijection on $\varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_\eta^*$, so it also restricts to a bijection on $\varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_S^*$. Therefore, $\varepsilon : M \to \mathcal{O}_S$ is a logarithmic structure. In fact, it is the direct image logarithmic structure defined more generally by Kato [Kat89, (1.4)].

The maximality of M is the universal property of the direct image logarithmic structure, which we verify explicitly. If M' also extends M_η then we have a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} M' & \longrightarrow & M'_\eta \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathcal{O}_S & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{O}_\eta \end{array}$$

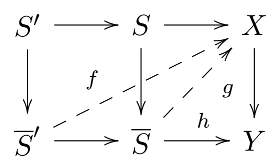
from which we obtain $M' \to M$ by the universal property of the fiber product.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

We argue $M \to M_\eta$ is relatively valuative. Suppose $\alpha \in M^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and $\varrho(\alpha) \in M_\eta$. As $\mathcal{O}_S$ is a valuation ring, either $\varepsilon(\varrho(\alpha)) \in \mathcal{O}_S$ or $\varepsilon(\varrho(\alpha)) \in \mathcal{O}_\eta^*$ and $\varepsilon(\varrho(\alpha))^{-1} \in \mathcal{O}_S$. In the first case $\alpha \in \varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_S$ so $\alpha \in M$ and in the latter case, $\varrho(-\alpha) \in M$ and $-\alpha \in \varepsilon^{-1}\mathcal{O}_S$ so $-\alpha \in M$. □

Theorem 2.2.5.2. *The morphism of schemes underlying a morphism of logarithmic schemes $X \to Y$ satisfies the valuative criterion for properness if and only if it has the unique right lifting property with respect to inclusions $S \subset \overline{S}$ where $\overline{S}$ is the spectrum of a valuation ring, S is its generic point, S has a valuative logarithmic structure M_S, and the logarithmic structure of $\overline{S}$ is the maximal extension of M_S.*

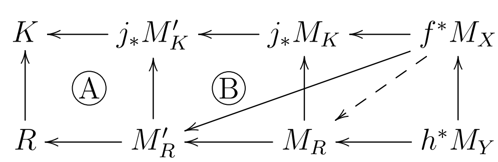
Proof. Let $S = \operatorname{Spec} K$ and $\overline{S} = \operatorname{Spec} R$, and let $j : S \to \overline{S}$ be the inclusion. Let M_K be a logarithmic structure on S and let M_R be the maximal logarithmic structure extending M_K to R. Let M'_K be a valuative logarithmic structure on K extending M_K and contained in M_K^{gp} (whose existence is guaranteed by Lemma 2.1.2.11), and let M'_R be its maximal extension to R, which is valuative. We consider a lifting problem with M_S pulled back from X:



(2.2.5.2.1)

Note that the valuative criterion for properness for the underlying schemes of X over Y is equivalent to the existence of a unique arrow lifting the square on the right, and that the assertion of the theorem is therefore that lifts of the square on the right are in bijection with lifts of the outer rectangle. Let us assume f has been specified and show that there is a unique choice of g.

We draw the maps of monoids and rings implied by (2.2.5.2.1):



By definition of the maximal extension of a logarithmic structure, the rectangles A and A ∪ B are cartesian. Therefore, B is cartesian and we get a unique dashed arrow by the universal property of fiber product. □

2.2.6 *Logarithmic modifications and root stacks.*

Definition 2.2.6.1. Let X be a logarithmic scheme. A *logarithmic modification* is a morphism $Y \to X$ that is, locally in X, the base change of a toric modification (proper, birational, toric morphism) of toric varieties.

More generally, we say that a morphism of presheaves $G \to F$ or fibered categories on the category of logarithmic schemes is a logarithmic modification if, for every logarithmic scheme X and morphism $X \to F$, the base change $X \times_F G \to X$ is a logarithmic modification.

Let X be a logarithmic scheme and let γ and δ be two sections of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We say that γ and δ are *locally comparable* on X if, for each geometric point x of X, we have $\gamma \leq \delta$ or $\delta \leq \gamma$ at x (in other words, $\delta - \gamma \in \overline{M}_{X,x}$ or $\gamma - \delta \in \overline{M}_{X,x}$).

Given X, γ, and δ as above, but not necessarily locally comparable, the property of local comparability defines a subfunctor of the one represented by X. That is, we can make the

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

following definition:

$$Y(W) = \{f : W \to X \mid f^*\gamma \text{ and } f^*\delta \text{ are locally comparable}\}.$$

Then Y is representable by a logarithmic modification of X. Indeed, locally in X, we can find a morphism $X \to \mathbf{A}^2$, with the target given its standard logarithmic structure, such that γ and δ are pulled back from the canonical generators of the characteristic monoid of $\mathbf{A}^2$. Then Y is the pullback of the blowup of $\mathbf{A}^2$ at the origin.

DEFINITION 2.2.6.2. Let X be a logarithmic scheme and let $\overline{M}_X^{\text{gp}} \subset \overline{N}^{\text{gp}} \subset \mathbf{Q}\overline{M}_X^{\text{gp}}$ be a locally finitely generated extension of $\overline{M}_X^{\text{gp}}$ (a *Kummer extension*). Define Y to be the following subfunctor of the one represented by X:

$$Y(U) = \{f : W \to X \mid f^*\overline{M}_X^{\text{gp}} \to \overline{M}_W^{\text{gp}} \text{ factors through } f^*\overline{N}^{\text{gp}}\}.$$

An algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure that represents Y is called the *root stack* of X along $\overline{N}^{\text{gp}}$.

We can give a concrete description of the root stack representing Y as follows. Working locally, we may assume that X has a global chart $X \to \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[P]$ for a sharp, integral, saturated monoid P, with $\overline{M}_X(X)^{\text{gp}} = P^{\text{gp}}$. The Kummer extension $\overline{N}^{\text{gp}}$ is then determined by a finitely generated extension of lattices $P^{\text{gp}} \to Q^{\text{gp}}$ with $Q^{\text{gp}}/P^{\text{gp}}$ finite. The homomorphism $P^{\text{gp}} \to Q^{\text{gp}}$ gives rise to a homomorphism of tori $\operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[Q^{\text{gp}}] \to \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[P^{\text{gp}}]$ with finite kernel K. If we think of P as the intersection of a cone C in $P^{\text{gp}} \otimes \mathbf{R}$ with the lattice P^{gp}, then $P^{\text{gp}} \to Q^{\text{gp}}$ determines a monoid $Q := C \cap Q^{\text{gp}}$, and the root stack representing Y is explicitly given by the quotient stack

$$[X \times_{\operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[P]} \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[Q]/K]$$

with its logarithmic structure descended from $X \times_{\operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[P]} \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[Q]$.

Remark 2.2.6.3. We note that in the category of logarithmic schemes, the structure maps of both logarithmic modifications and root stacks of X are *monomorphisms*, despite the fact that the map from the underlying scheme or stack of the modification or root stack to the underlying scheme of X is far from a monomorphism.

2.2.7 *The logarithmic multiplicative group.*

DEFINITION 2.2.7.1. Define functors $\mathbf{LogSch}^{\text{op}} \to \mathbf{Sets}$ by the following formulas:

$$\mathbf{G}_{\log}(S) = \Gamma(S, M_S^{\text{gp}})$$
$$\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(S) = \Gamma(S, \overline{M}_S^{\text{gp}})$$

We call the first of these the *logarithmic multiplicative group*.

PROPOSITION 2.2.7.2. *Neither $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ nor $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ is representable by an algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure.*

Proof. We will treat $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$. The argument is essentially the same with $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$.

Suppose that there is an algebraic stack X with a logarithmic structure representing $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$. Let S_0 be the spectrum of a field k, equipped with a logarithmic structure $k^* \times (\mathbf{N}e_1 + \mathbf{N}e_2)$. The element e_2 gives a map $f : S_0 \to X$, hence $f^*\overline{M}_X \to \overline{M}_{S_0}$.

Now, for each $t \in \mathbf{Z}$, let S_t have the same underlying scheme as S_0, with the logarithmic structure $k^* \times (\mathbf{N}e_1 + \mathbf{N}(e_2 + te_1))$. Then $M_{S_t}^{\text{gp}} = M_{S_0}^{\text{gp}}$ for all t, so the map $S_0 \to X$ factors through $S_0 \subset S_t$ for all $t \geq 0$. Therefore, the map $f^*\overline{M}_X \to \overline{M}_{S_0}$ factors through $\overline{M}_{S_t}$ for

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

all $t \geq 0$. Thus, $\overline{M}_X \to \overline{M}_{S_0}$ factors through $\bigcap_t \overline{M}_{S_t} = \mathbf{N}e_1$. But the element $e_2 \in \Gamma(S_0, M_{S_0}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is clearly not induced from an element of $\mathbf{Z}e_1$. □

Lemma 2.2.7.3. *Let* $\mathbf{P}$ *be the subfunctor of* $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ *whose* S *points consist of those* $\alpha \in \mathbf{G}_{\log}(S)$ *that are locally (in* S*) comparable to* 0.

(1) $\mathbf{P}$ *is isomorphic to* $\mathbf{P}^1$ *with its toric logarithmic structure.*
(2) $\mathbf{P}$ *is a logarithmic modification of* $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$.

Proof. Note that the logarithmic structure $M_{\mathbf{A}^2}$ has two tautological sections, α and β, coming from the two projections to $\mathbf{A}^1$. The difference of these sections determines a map $\mathbf{A}^2 \to \mathbf{G}_m^{\log}$. The open subset $\mathbf{A}^2 - \{0\}$ may be presented as the union of the loci where $\alpha \geq 0$ and where $\beta \geq 0$, which coincide with the loci where $\alpha - \beta \leq 0$ and $\alpha - \beta \geq 0$, respectively. We note that adjusting α and β simultaneously by the same unit leaves $\alpha - \beta$ unchanged, so that we have constructed a map $\mathbf{P}^1 \to \mathbf{P}$.

To see that this is an isomorphism, consider the open subfunctors of $\mathbf{P}$ where $\alpha \geq 0$ and where $\alpha \leq 0$. These are each isomorphic to $\mathbf{A}^1$, and their preimages under $\mathbf{P}^1 \to \mathbf{P}$ are the two standard charts of $\mathbf{P}^1$.

Finally, we verify that $\mathbf{P} \to \mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is a logarithmic modification. We need to show that if Z is a logarithmic scheme and $Z \to \mathbf{G}_m^{\log}$ is any morphism then $Z \times_{\mathbf{G}_{\log}} \mathbf{P} \to Z$ is a logarithmic modification. This is a local assertion in Z, and any section in M_Z^{gp} is locally pulled back from a logarithmic map to an affine toric variety, so we can assume Z is an affine toric variety with cone σ.

Let $\overline{\alpha}$ be the image of α in $\overline{M}_Z^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We can regard sections of $\overline{M}_Z^{\mathrm{gp}}$ as linear functions with integer slope on the ambient vector space of σ. Then $Z \times_{\mathbf{G}_m^{\log}} \mathbf{P}$ is representable by the subdivision of σ along the hyperplane where $\overline{\alpha}$ vanishes. □

Corollary 2.2.7.4. *Both* $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ *and* $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ *have logarithmically smooth covers by logarithmic schemes.*

Proof. We have just seen that $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ has a logarithmically étale cover by $\mathbf{P}^1$, and therefore $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log} = \mathbf{G}_{\log}/\mathbf{G}_m$ has a logarithmically étale cover by $[\mathbf{P}^1/\mathbf{G}_m]$. □

Proposition 2.2.7.5. *The inclusion of the origin in* $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ *is representable by affine logarithmic schemes of finite type.*

Proof. Suppose that S is a logarithmic scheme and $S \to \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ is a morphism corresponding to a section $\alpha \in \Gamma(S, \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Let N be the submonoid of M_S^{gp} generated by M_S and $\mathcal{O}_S(\alpha)$. The assertion is local (in the Zariski topology, say) of S, so we may choose a local trivialization $\tilde{\alpha}$ of α. Then the pullback of the origin in $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ to S is represented by $\operatorname{Spec} \mathcal{O}_S[t, t^{-1}]/I$ where t and t^{-1} are indeterminates representing the images of $\tilde{\alpha}$ and $\tilde{\alpha}^{-1}$ and I is the ideal of relations necessary to permit a monoid homomorphism $N \to \mathcal{O}_S[t, t^{-1}]$ that restricts to $\varepsilon : M_S \to \mathcal{O}_S$ on M_S and sends $\tilde{\alpha}$ to t. This gives the universal (not necessarily saturated) logarithmic scheme over S on which α restricts to 0, and saturation completes the proof. □

Example 2.2.7.6. Consider the map $\mathbf{A}^2 \to \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ given by twice the difference $2e_2 - 2e_1$ of the two generators $e_1, e_2 \in (\overline{M}_{\mathbf{A}^2}(\mathbf{A}^2))^{\mathrm{gp}}$. A map $T \to \mathbf{A}^2 \times_{\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}} 0$ corresponds to two sections $x, y \in M_T(T)$ such that y^2/x^2 is a unit. Thus, the fiber product is representable by the closed subscheme $Z \subset \mathbf{A}^2 \times \mathbf{G}_m$ defined by the ideal $x^2 - ty^2$, with logarithmic structure induced from $\mathbf{A}^2$ but with the relation that $x^2 = ty^2$ required to hold in the logarithmic structure as well. Passing to

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

the saturation gives the logarithmic scheme representing $\mathbf{A}^2 \times_{\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}} 0$ in the category of saturated logarithmic schemes.

2.3 Tropical geometry

2.3.1 *Tropical moduli problems.* We summarize [CCUW20]. For the purposes of this paper, a tropical moduli problem is a covariant functor on, or category covariantly fibered in groupoids over, the category of integral, saturated, sharp, commutative monoids. Such a moduli problem extends automatically, in a canonical fashion, to one defined on all integral, saturated, sharp, commutative monoidal spaces, and even all such monoidal topoi. In particular, it extends to logarithmic schemes, by regarding logarithmic schemes as monoidal topoi by way of the characteristic monoid.

There are two ways to produce this extension of the moduli problem. The first, and perhaps simpler, of the two is to extend a moduli problem F on commutative monoids to one defined on monoidal spaces (or topoi) by setting $F(S) = F(\Gamma(S, \overline{M}_S))$ and then sheafifying (or stackifying) the result.

An equivalent construction, when working over logarithmic schemes with coherent logarithmic structures, is to define $F(S)$ to be the set of systems of data $\xi_s \in F(\overline{M}_{S,s})$, one for each geometric point s of S, such that $\xi_t \mapsto \xi_s$ under the morphism $F(\overline{M}_{S,t}) \to F(\overline{M}_{S,s})$ associated to a geometric specialization $s \rightsquigarrow t$. This has the effect of building stackification into the definition, but either construction is adequate for our needs.

In practice, when formulating a tropical moduli problem, the difficult part seems to tend to lie in describing the functoriality with respect to monoid homomorphisms. More specifically, any homomorphism of commutative monoids can be factored into a localization homomorphism followed by a sharp homomorphism. Functoriality with respect to sharp homomorphisms is straightforward, but localizations tend to involve changes of topology that are more difficult to control. For the tropical Picard group and tropical Jacobian, the notion that makes this work is called *bounded monodromy*, and is first discussed in § 3.5.

The principal concern of [CCUW20] was the question of algebraicity of tropical moduli problems, meaning possession of a well-behaved cover by rational polyhedral cones. None of the moduli problems we consider here is algebraic in this sense, although they often do have logarithmically smooth covers by logarithmic schemes. This suggests the subject of algebraicity should be revisited with a more inclusive perspective. To do so will require a less chaotic topology than the one introduced in [CCUW20], such as the one that appears implicitly in § 3.1, and a bit more explicitly in § 3.11 of this paper.

2.3.2 *Tropical topology.* We introduce a tropical topology that does not appear in [CCUW20]. This material will be needed in § 3.11 and nowhere else, so we develop only the few facts we will need there. A thorough treatment will be taken up elsewhere.

Definition 2.3.2.1. Let $\overline{M}$ be a sharp (integral, saturated) monoid. A *sharp valuation* of $\overline{M}$ is an isomorphism class of surjective homomorphisms from $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ to totally ordered abelian groups that preserve the *strict* order of $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Here, an isomorphism between $v : \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{V}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and $w : \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{W}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is an isomorphism $f : \overline{V}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{W}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ such that $fv = w$.

Remark 2.3.2.2. Equivalently, a sharp valuation of $\overline{M}$ is an isomorphism class of sharp homomorphisms $\overline{M} \to V$ where $\overline{V}$ is a (sharp) valuative monoid and $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{V}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is surjective.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proposition 2.3.2.3. *Let $\overline{M}$ be a sharp (integral, saturated) monoid and let* $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ *be its set of sharp valuations. Give* $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ *the coarsest topology in which a subset defined by a finite set of strict inequalities among elements of* $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ *is open. Then* $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ *is quasicompact.*

Proof. Consider a descending sequence of closed subsets $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M}) = Z_0 \supset Z_1 \supset Z_2 \supset \cdots$, with Z_i defined relative to Z_{i-1} by an inequality $\alpha_i \geq 0$, with $\alpha_i \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Then Z_i is represented by the submonoid $\overline{M}[\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_i] \subset \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ in the sense that a valuation of $\overline{M}$ (sharp or not) with valuation monoid $\overline{V}$ lies in Z_i if and only if the homomorphism $\overline{M} \to \overline{V}$ factors through $\overline{M}[\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_i]$. By Lemma 2.1.2.11, the condition that $\bigcap Z_i = \varnothing$ means that $\overline{M}[\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \ldots]$ contains the inverse $-\beta$ of some element $\beta \in \overline{M}$. But then $-\beta$ is a finite combination of the α_i and elements of $\overline{M}$ and lies therefore in $\overline{M}[\alpha_1, \ldots, \alpha_i]$ for some i. We conclude that $Z_i = \varnothing$. □

Remark 2.3.2.4. The basic open subsets of $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ are the subsets representable as $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{N})$ where $\overline{N} \subset \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a finitely generated extension.

Remark 2.3.2.5. Suppose that $\delta \in \mathbf{Q}\overline{M}$. Then there is some positive integer n such that $n\delta \in \overline{M}$ and the inequality $n\delta > 0$ determines an open subset of $\mathrm{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$. Since valuative monoids are always saturated, this open subset does not depend on the choice of n. We can therefore construct open subsets of $\mathbf{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ from inequalities in $\mathbf{Q}\overline{M}$.

2.3.3 *Tropical curves.* The main example in [CCUW20] is the moduli space of tropical curves. We recall the main definition here, with small modifications, one of which is significant. First, we have no use for marked points here (which appear as unbounded legs in the graphs of tropical curves), so we omit them below. Second, we allow unrooted edges that are not attached at any vertex. This second modification is essential for the definition of the topology in § 3.1.

Definition 2.3.3.1. Let $\overline{M}$ be a commutative monoid. A *tropical curve* metrized by $\overline{M}$ is a tuple $\mathscr{X} = (G, r, i, \ell)$ where

(1) G is a set,
(2) $r : G \to G$ is a partially defined idempotent function,
(3) $i : G \to G$ is an involution, and
(4) $\ell : G \to \overline{M}$ is a function

such that

(5) $\ell(i(x)) = \ell(x)$ for all x, and
(6) $r(x) = x$ if and only if $i(x) = x$ if and only if $\ell(x) = 0$.

We often abuse notation and write $x \in \mathscr{X}$ to mean that $x \in G$.

If $x \in \mathscr{X}$ then $\ell(x)$ is called its *length*. The elements of $\mathscr{X}$ of length 0 are called *vertices*. The remaining elements are called *flags* or *oriented edges*. An unordered pair of flags exchanged by i is called an *edge*. We call $\mathscr{X}$ *compact* if r is defined on all of G.

We imagine the set G as the disjoint union of a set of vertices and a set of flags (a vertex with an incident edge). The function r sends a flag to the vertex at which it is attached and restricts to the identity on the vertices, which are characterized by this property. We think of an element of G on which r is not defined as an oriented edge that is not rooted at any vertex.

Remark 2.3.3.2. It is customary to include a weighting by nonnegative integers on the vertices in the definition of a tropical curve, standing for the genus of a component of a stable curve. Such a weighting could be added to Definition 2.3.3.1 with no significant change to the rest of the paper. As the weighting has no effect on the definition of the tropical Picard group, we have omitted it to keep the notation as light as possible.

The work of Amini and Caporaso on the Riemann–Roch theorem for tropical curves with vertex weights [AC13] suggests that a vertex with positive weight g can be imagined as a vertex of weight 0 with g phantom loops attached, all of length 0. They prove Riemann–Roch by endowing these loops with positive length ϵ and then allowing ϵ to shrink to zero. The most naive application of the same approach would yield a different tropical Picard group than the one we consider, and would not have the same relationship to the logarithmic Picard group.

If $f : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a homomorphism of commutative monoids, and $\mathscr{X}$ is a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$, and r is defined on every flag x of $\mathscr{X}$ such that $f(\ell(x)) = 0$, then f induces an *edge contraction* of $\mathscr{X}$, as follows. Let $\mathscr{Y}$ be the quotient of $\mathscr{X}$ in which a flag x is identified with $r(x)$ if $f(\ell(x)) = 0$. Note that if $f(\ell(x)) = 0$, this identification also identifies $r(x) \sim r(i(x))$ since $i^2(r(x)) = x$. Then ℓ descends to a well-defined function on $\mathscr{Y}$, valued in $\overline{N}$, and makes $\mathscr{Y}$ into a tropical curve.

Following the procedure outlined in § 2.3.1, we can now think of tropical curves as a tropical moduli problem: for any sharp monoid $\overline{P}$, we define $\mathcal{M}^{\mathrm{trop}}(\overline{P})$ to be the groupoid of tropical curves metrized by $\overline{P}$. Note, however, that Definition 2.3.3.1 is slightly different from the one considered in [CCUW20].

Definition 2.3.3.3. Let S be a logarithmic scheme. A *tropical curve* over S is the choice of a tropical curve $\mathscr{X}_s$ for each geometric point s of S and an edge contraction $\mathscr{X}_s \to \mathscr{X}_t$ for each geometric specialization $t \rightsquigarrow s$ such that the edges of $\mathscr{X}_s$ contracted in $\mathscr{X}_t$ are precisely the ones whose lengths lie in the kernel of $\overline{M}_s^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_t^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

Definition 2.3.3.4. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$ with vertex set V. We define $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X})$ to be the set of functions $\lambda = (\alpha, \mu) : G_{\mathscr{X}} \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times \mathbf{Z}$ satisfying the following conditions.

(1) If x is a vertex then $\mu(x) = 0$.
(2) We have $\alpha(r(x)) = \alpha(x)$ for all x on which r is defined.
(3) We have $\alpha(i(x)) = \alpha(x) + \mu(x)\ell(x)$.

Note that the third condition implies that $\mu(x) = -\mu(i(x))$ since

$$\alpha(x) = \alpha(i^2(x)) = \alpha(i(x)) + \mu(i(x))\ell(x)$$

and $\ell(x)$ is nonzero. We define $\mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X})$ to be the subset of $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X})$ where the following additional balancing condition is satisfied.

(4) For each vertex x of $\mathscr{X}$, we have $\sum_{r(y)=x} \mu(y) = 0$.

Elements of $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X})$ are called *piecewise linear functions* on $\mathscr{X}$ and elements of $\mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X})$ are called *linear functions*.

Remark 2.3.3.5. The terms *balanced* and *harmonic* are often employed synonymously with 'linear'.

If $\mathscr{X}$ is a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$ and $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a monoid homomorphism inducing a tropical curve $\mathscr{Y}$ metrized by $\overline{N}$ then there are natural homomorphisms $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y})$ and $\mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{L}(\mathscr{Y})$. Thus, tropical curves equipped with piecewise linear functions are a tropical moduli problem. See Proposition 3.7.3 for further details.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

2.3.4 *Subdivision of tropical curves.*

Definition 2.3.4.1. Let $\mathscr{Y}$ be a tropical curve metrized by a commutative monoid $\overline{M}$. Let y be a 2-valent vertex of $\mathscr{Y}$. We construct a new tropical curve $\mathscr{X}$ by removing y from $\mathscr{Y}$ along with the two flags e and f incident to y and defining

$$i_{\mathscr{X}}(i_{\mathscr{Y}}(e)) = i_{\mathscr{Y}}(f), \quad i_{\mathscr{X}}(i_{\mathscr{Y}}(f)) = i_{\mathscr{Y}}(e),$$
$$\ell_{\mathscr{X}}(i_{\mathscr{Y}}(e)) = \ell_{\mathscr{X}}(i_{\mathscr{Y}}(f)) = \ell_{\mathscr{Y}}(e) + \ell_{\mathscr{Y}}(f).$$

We call $\mathscr{Y}$ a *basic subdivision* of $\mathscr{X}$ at the edge $\{i_{\mathscr{Y}}(e), i_{\mathscr{Y}}(f)\}$. If $\mathscr{X}$ is obtained from $\mathscr{Y}$ by a sequence of basic subdivisions, we call $\mathscr{Y}$ a *subdivision* of $\mathscr{X}$.

If $\mathscr{Y}$ is a subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$ then $G_{\mathscr{Y}}$ contains a copy of $G_{\mathscr{X}}$. An isomorphism of subdivisions is an isomorphism of tropical curves that respects this copy of the underlying set.

Lemma 2.3.4.2. *If $\mathscr{X}'$ is a subdivision of a tropical curve $\mathscr{X}$ metrized by $\overline{M}$, and $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a localization homomorphism, then the edge contraction $\mathscr{Y}'$ of $\mathscr{X}'$ is naturally a subdivision of the edge contraction $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$.*

Proof. It is sufficient to assume that $\mathscr{X}'$ is a basic subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$ at an edge e into edges e' and e''. The main point is that if $\ell(e)$ maps to 0 in $\overline{N}$ then $\ell(e')$ and $\ell(e'')$ do as well, since $0 \leq \ell(e') \leq \ell(e)$ and $0 \leq \ell(e'') \leq \ell(e)$, which implies that e' and e'' are both contracted if e is. □

2.4 Logarithmic curves

2.4.1 *Logarithmic structure.*

Definition 2.4.1.1. Let S be a logarithmic scheme. A *logarithmic curve* over S is an integral, saturated, logarithmically smooth morphism $\pi : X \to S$ of relative dimension 1.

Theorem 2.4.1.2 (F. Kato). *Let X be a logarithmic curve over S. Then the underlying scheme of X is a flat family of nodal curves over S and, for a geometric point x of X lying above the geometric point s of S, one of the following possibilities applies.*

(1) *x is a smooth point of its fiber in the underlying schematic curve of X, and $\overline{M}_{S,s} \to \overline{M}_{X,x}$ is an isomorphism.*
(2) *x is a marked point, and there is an isomorphism $\overline{M}_{S,s} + \mathbf{N}\alpha \to \overline{M}_{X,x}$ where $\mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$ is the ideal of the marking.*
(3) *x is a node of its fiber and there is an isomorphism $\overline{M}_{S,s} + \mathbf{N}\alpha + \mathbf{N}\beta/(\alpha + \beta = \delta) \to \overline{M}_{X,x}$, with $\delta \in \overline{M}_{S,s}$. The invertible sheaf $\mathcal{O}_S(-\delta)$ is the pullback of the ideal sheaf of the boundary divisor corresponding to the node x from the moduli space of curves, and $\mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$ and $\mathcal{O}_X(-\beta)$ are the pullbacks of ideal sheaves of the two branches of the universal curve at x.*

If X is vertical over S then the second possibility does not occur.

We write $\mathcal{M}_{g,n}^{\log}$ for the moduli space of logarithmic curves of genus g with n (ordered) marked points.

The following theorem characterizes the logarithmic structures of logarithmic curves over valuative bases. For a proof, see [MW17, Proposition 3.6.4].

Theorem 2.4.1.3. *Let S be the spectrum of a valuation ring with generic point η and let X be a family of nodal curves over S. Assume that X_η and η have been given logarithmic structures M_{X_η} and M_η making X_η into a logarithmic curve over η, with M_η valuative. Let M_X and M_S be the maximal extensions, respectively, of M_{X_η} and M_η to X and to S. Then X is a logarithmic curve over S.*

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

2.4.2 *Tropicalizing logarithmic curves.* Theorem 2.4.1.2 allows us to construct a family of tropical curves over S from a family X of logarithmic curves over S. For each geometric point s of S, let $\mathscr{X}_s$ be the dual graph of X_s, metrized by $\overline{M}_{S,s}$ with $\ell(e) = \delta$ when e is the edge associated to the node x in the notation of Theorem 2.4.1.2(3).

If $s \rightsquigarrow t$ is a geometric specialization, then $\mathscr{X}_s$ is obtained from $\mathscr{X}_t$ by contracting the edges of $\mathscr{X}_t$ that correspond to nodes of X_t smoothed in X_s. Therefore, the association $X_s \mapsto \mathscr{X}_s$ commutes with the geometric generization maps and defines a morphism $\mathcal{M}_{g,n}^{\log} \to \mathcal{M}^{\mathrm{trop}}$ from the moduli space of logarithmic curves to the moduli space of tropical curves. See [CCUW20, § 5] for further details.

The essence of the following lemma comes from Gross and Siebert [GS13, § 1.4]. It allows us to relate the characteristic monoid of a logarithmic curve to piecewise linear functions on the tropicalization.

LEMMA 2.4.2.1. *Let $\overline{M}$ be a commutative monoid. Then*

$$\overline{M} + \mathbf{N}\alpha + \mathbf{N}\beta/(\alpha + \beta = \delta) \xrightarrow{\sim} \{(a, b) \in \overline{M} \times \overline{M} \mid a - b \in \mathbf{Z}\delta\}$$

where $\alpha \mapsto (0, \delta)$, $\beta \mapsto (\delta, 0)$, and $\gamma \mapsto (\gamma, \gamma)$ for all $\gamma \in \overline{M}$.

Proof. The map is well defined by the universal property of the pushout. The following formula gives the inverse:

$$(a, b) \mapsto \begin{cases} a + \dfrac{b-a}{\delta}\alpha, & b \geq a, \\ b + \dfrac{a-b}{\delta}\beta, & a \geq b. \end{cases}$$ □

COROLLARY 2.4.2.2. *Let S be a the spectrum of an algebraically closed field and let X be a logarithmic curve over S with tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$. Then $\Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ and $\Gamma(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$ are naturally identified.*

Proof. Lemma 2.4.2.1 identifies the stalk of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ at a node of X with the linear functions of integer slope on the corresponding edge of $\mathscr{X}$. Generizing to one branch or the other of the node corresponds to evaluating the function at one endpoint or the other of the edge. Therefore, a global section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ amounts to a function on $\mathscr{X}$ taking values in $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that is linear along the edges with integer slopes. □

We give a more local version of this corollary, using the tropical topology from § 3.1.

Let S be a logarithmic scheme whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field, let X be a logarithmic curve over S, and let $\mathscr{X}$ be its tropicalization. Suppose that $p : \mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a tropical local isomorphism. Each v vertex of $\mathscr{X}$ corresponds to a component X_v of the normalization of X and each edge v of $\mathscr{X}$ corresponds to a node X_v of X. Let $U = \varinjlim_{u \in U} X_{p(u)}$. Effectively, U is the union of components of the normalization of X indexed by the vertices of $\mathscr{U}$, joined along nodes indexed by the edges of $\mathscr{U}$, together with some disjoint nodes corresponding to unattached edges of $\mathscr{U}$.

There is a canonical projection $U \to X$ that is étale except at the points corresponding to zero- and one-sided edges. We give U the logarithmic structure pulled back from X.

Remark 2.4.2.3. This construction extends to families with locally constant dual graph, but no further. Should $\mathscr{U}$ be a covering space of $\mathscr{X}$ then U will be étale over X and therefore this construction extends infinitesimally, but not necessarily any further than that. If $\mathscr{U}$ is in addition *finite* over $\mathscr{X}$ then the construction can be extended to an arbitrary base.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

The construction described above gives a functor t^{-1} from the category of local isomorphisms $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ to the category of finite strict X-schemes. We refer to this as an *anticontinuous morphism* from X to $\mathscr{X}$, but we make no attempt to develop a general theory of anticontinuous maps here.

Lemma 2.4.2.4. *We have $t_* \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} = \mathscr{P}_{\mathscr{X}}$. That is, for any open subset $\mathscr{U}$ of $\mathscr{X}$, we have $\Gamma(\mathscr{U}, \mathscr{P}) = \Gamma(t^{-1}\mathscr{U}, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$.*

2.4.3 *Subdivision of logarithmic curves.* Let X be a logarithmic curve over S and let $\mathscr{X}$ be its tropicalization. Suppose that $\mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a subdivision. We construct an associated logarithmic modification $Y \to X$ such that the tropicalization of Y is $\mathscr{X}$.

We may make this construction étale-locally on S, provided we do so in a manner compatible with further localization. Every subdivision of tropical curves is locally an iterate of basic subdivisions, so we may assume that $\mathscr{Y}$ is a basic subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$. We now describe $Y \to X$ locally in X.

Suppose that e is the edge of $\mathscr{X}$ subdivided in $\mathscr{Y}$, and that Z is the corresponding node of X. Note that Z is a closed subset of X, not necessarily a point unless S is a point. Over the complement of Z, we take the map $Y \to X$ to be an isomorphism. It remains to describe Y on an étale neighborhood of Z.

We may work étale-locally in X, again provided that our construction is compatible with further étale localization. We can therefore work in an étale neighborhood U of a geometric point $x \in Z$ and an étale neighborhood T of its image in S, and we can assume that

(1) $\overline{M}_{X,x} = \overline{M}_{S,s} + \mathbf{N}\alpha + \mathbf{N}\beta / (\alpha + \beta = \delta)$ for some $\delta \in \overline{M}_{S,s}$,
(2) α and β come from global sections of $\overline{M}_X$ over U, and
(3) δ comes from a global section of $\overline{M}_S$ over T.

Now, recall that we may think of α and β as barycentric coordinates on the edge e of $\mathscr{X}$ that was subdivided in $\mathscr{Y}$. Suppose that this edge was subdivided at the point where $\alpha = \gamma$ (and therefore $\beta = \delta - \gamma$) for some $\gamma \in \Gamma(T, \overline{M}_S)$. We ask V to represent the subfunctor of the functor represented by U where α and γ are locally comparable. Then V is a logarithmic modification of U.

To see that the construction is compatible with further localization, the main point is that the only ambiguity in the above construction is the choice of labeling of the generators of $\overline{M}_{X,x}$ as α and β. This choice is in bijection with the choice of orientation of the edge e. Reversing the labeling also reverses the orientation, and we impose the comparability of β with $\delta - \gamma$. But $\alpha = \delta - \beta$, so α is comparable to γ if and only if β is comparable to $\delta - \gamma$ and the resulting logarithmic modification is the same. These local modifications therefore patch together to give a logarithmic modification $Y \to X$.

Remark 2.4.3.1. It is possible to understand $Y \to X$ as the pullback of $\mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ along the tropicalization map $t : X \to \mathscr{X}$. This point of view will be developed elsewhere.

3. The tropical Picard group and the tropical Jacobian

3.1 The topology of a tropical curve

Definition 3.1.1. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve and let x be a vertex of $\mathscr{X}$. The *star* of x is the set of all $y \in \mathscr{X}$ such that $r(y) = x$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

FIGURE 3. Graphical representations of tropical curves. Filled circles are vertices while open circles are endpoints of edges with absent vertices.

FIGURE 4. The curve on the left is locally isomorphic to the curve on the right.

DEFINITION 3.1.2. Let $\mathscr{Y}$ and $\mathscr{X}$ be tropical curves metrized by the same monoid $\overline{M}$. A function $f : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ is called a *local isomorphism* if it commutes with all of the functions r, ℓ, and i and it restricts to a bijection on the star of each vertex.

A local isomorphism is called an *open embedding* if it is also injective. The image of an open embedding of tropical curves is called an *open subcurve*.

In Figure 3 there are six distinct local isomorphisms from the curve on the right to the curve on the left, assuming that all edges have the same length.

LEMMA 3.1.3. *An open subcurve of $\mathscr{X}$ is a subset of $\mathscr{X}$ that is stable under i and r^{-1}.*

Proof. This is immediate. □

Remark 3.1.4. A tropical curve with real edge lengths has an evident realization as a metric space. The open subcurves of $\mathscr{X}$ are the subcurves whose realizations are open subsets of the realization of $\mathscr{X}$. Since the tropical topology depends only on the underlying graph of $\mathscr{X}$, and not on its metric, this remark characterizes the tropical topology of all tropical curves.

Example 3.1.5. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve with one vertex, x, and one edge $\{e, i(e)\}$, of length δ, connecting that vertex to itself. Let $\mathscr{Y}$ by a tropical curve with one vertex, y, and two edges $\{f, i(f)\}$ and $\{g, i(g)\}$, both of length δ, with $r(e) = r(f) = y$ and with $r(i(e))$ and $r(i(f))$ both undefined. See Figure 4 for a picture. There is a local isomorphism $\mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ sending y to x, sending f to e, and sending g to $i(e)$. This local isomorphism does not restrict to open embeddings on any open cover of $\mathscr{Y}$.

LEMMA 3.1.6. *Any logarithmic curve $\mathscr{X}$ has a minimal cover by a local isomorphism $\mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$. That is, for any cover $\mathscr{Z} \to \mathscr{X}$, there is a (not necessarily unique) factorization $\mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{Z}$ of the projection from $\mathscr{Y}$ to $\mathscr{X}$.*

Proof. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve and let $\mathscr{Y}_0$ be the disjoint union of the stars of the vertices. Construct $\mathscr{Y}$ by adjoining a new flag $i(x)$ for each nonvertex flag x of $\mathscr{Y}_0$. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Definition 3.1.7. A collection of local isomorphisms $p_i : \mathscr{U}_i \to \mathscr{X}$ of a tropical curve $\mathscr{X}$ is called a *cover* if $\mathscr{X} = \bigcup p_i(\mathscr{U}_i)$. We call this the *tropical topology* of $\mathscr{X}$.

Let $\mathscr{Y}$ be a subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$. We construct an associated morphism of sites $\rho : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$. Let $\tau : \mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ be a local isomorphism. For each edge e of $\mathscr{U}$, the restriction of τ to e is a bijection. Form $\rho^{-1}\mathscr{U}$ by subdividing e in precisely the same way $\tau(e)$ is subdivided in $\mathscr{Y}$. Then we have an evident local isomorphism $\rho^{-1}\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{Y}$.

Proposition 3.1.8. *The construction outlined above determines a morphism of sites ρ from that of $\mathscr{Y}$ to that of $\mathscr{X}$.*

Proof. One must verify that the construction respects covers and fiber products of local isomorphisms. Both are immediate. □

Suppose that $\mathscr{X}$ is a tropical curve over a logarithmic scheme S. This construction makes it possible to organize the sites of the fibers of $\mathscr{X}$ over S into a fibered site [SGA4(2), 7.2.1] over $\text{ét}(S)^{\text{op}}$, the *opposite* of the étale site of S.

3.2 The sheaves of linear and piecewise linear functions

If $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a local isomorphism then we have maps $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{U})$ and $\mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{L}(\mathscr{U})$ by restriction. This makes PL and L into presheaves on the category of tropical curves with local isomorphisms to $\mathscr{X}$.

Proposition 3.2.1. *The presheaves L and PL are sheaves in the tropical topology.*

Proof. Since piecewise linear functions are functions defined on the underlying set of a tropical curve, and tropical covers are set-theoretic covers, it is immediate that PL forms a sheaf. The subpresheaf L is defined by the balancing condition at each vertex of the underlying graph, which depends only on the star of that vertex. By definition, a tropical cover induces a bijection on the star of each vertex, and therefore the balancing condition is visible locally in a tropical cover. □

Proposition 3.2.2. *Let $\rho : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ be a subdivision of tropical curves. Then $\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{X}} \to \mathrm{R}\rho_* \mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}}$ is an isomorphism.*

Proof. By induction, we can also assume that $\mathscr{Y}$ is a basic subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$. The assertion is local on $\mathscr{X}$ so we can assume that $\mathscr{X}$ is a bare edge with no vertices. In that case, $\mathscr{Y}$ is a vertex with two edges. Thus, $\mathscr{Y}$ has no nontrivial covers, so $\mathrm{R}^p \rho_* \mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}} = 0$ for all $p > 0$ and the isomorphism $\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{X}} \simeq \rho_* \mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}}$ is a straightforward calculation. □

Suppose that $\mathscr{X}$ is a tropical curve over S. On each stratum Z of S, the tropical curve $\mathscr{X}$ is locally constant, so the cohomology $H^*(\mathscr{X}_Z, \mathsf{L})$ can be represented by a complex of locally constant abelian groups. If $s \rightsquigarrow t$ is a geometric generization of S there is a map $\mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X}_t) \to \mathsf{L}(\mathscr{X}_s)$, but there is no guarantee of a generization map $H^1(\mathscr{X}_t, \mathsf{L}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}_s, \mathsf{L})$ if s and t are in different strata. To get the generization map, we will need to impose the bounded monodromy condition in § 3.5.

Proposition 3.2.3. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a logarithmic curve metrized by $\overline{M}$, let $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ be a homomorphism such that $\overline{M}^{\text{gp}} \to \overline{N}^{\text{gp}}$ is an isomorphism, and let $\mathscr{Y}$ be the induced tropical curve metrized by $\overline{N}$. Then $\mathrm{B}\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{X}} \to \mathrm{B}\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}}$ is an isomorphism of stacks on $\mathscr{X}$.*

Proof. Since $\overline{M}^{\text{gp}} = \overline{N}^{\text{gp}}$, the sheaves $\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{X}}$ and $\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}}$ are the same when we identify the underlying graphs of $\mathscr{X}$ and $\mathscr{Y}$. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

3.3 The intersection pairing on a tropical curve

The following definition seems to be due originally to Grothendieck [SGA7(1), Equation (12.4.5)]:

DEFINITION 3.3.1. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$, and let $\ell(e) \in \overline{M}$ denote the length of an edge e of $\mathscr{X}$. If e and f are oriented edges of $\mathscr{X}$, we define

$$e.f = \begin{cases} \ell(e), & f = e, \\ -\ell(e), & f = e', \\ 0 & \text{otherwise}, \end{cases}$$

and extend by linearity to an *intersection pairing* on the free abelian group generated by the oriented edges of $\mathscr{X}$. By restriction this also gives a pairing on the first homology of $\mathscr{X}$.

LEMMA 3.3.2. *Suppose that $\mathscr{X}$ is a tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$ and $u : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a homomorphism inducing an edge contraction $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$. Then the intersection pairing is compatible with u, in the sense that the following diagram commutes:*

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} H_1(\mathscr{X}) \times H_1(\mathscr{Y}) & \subset & \mathbf{Z}^{E(\mathscr{X})} \times \mathbf{Z}^{E(\mathscr{X})} & \longrightarrow & \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H_1(\mathscr{Y}) \times H_1(\mathscr{Y}) & \subset & \mathbf{Z}^{E(\mathscr{Y})} \times \mathbf{Z}^{E(\mathscr{Y})} & \longrightarrow & \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}} \end{array} \tag{3.3.2.1}$$

Proof. The proof is immediate. □

3.4 The tropical degree

Let V denote the quotient PL/L. Then $\mathsf{V}(\mathscr{U})$ is the free abelian group generated by the vertices of $\mathscr{U}$.

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$. There is an embedding of the constant sheaf $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ inside $\mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{X}}$ as the constant functions. We write H for the quotient of L by $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and E for the quotient of PL by $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. This yields the following commutative diagram with exact rows and columns:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} & & & & 0 & & 0 & & \\ & & & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{L} & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{H} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \| & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{PL} & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{E} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\ & & & & \mathsf{V} & = & \mathsf{V} & & \\ & & & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\ & & & & 0 & & 0 & & \end{array} \tag{3.4.1}$$

We note that E is the sheaf freely generated by the edges and that $\mathsf{E} \to \mathsf{V}$ is the coboundary map in homology. Therefore, H is the sheaf whose value on $\mathscr{U}$ is the first Borel–Moore homology of the topological realization of $\mathscr{U}$. Note that because $\mathscr{X}$ can have one-sided or even zero-sided edges, the Borel–Moore homology is not locally trivial.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Remark 3.4.2. Diagram (3.4.1) gives several ways of producing a tropical line bundle. First, a class in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ (that is, a local system with transition functions in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$) gives a tropical line bundle by extending the structure group. Second, an integer linear combination of vertices of $\mathscr{X}$ (a section of V) yields a tropical line bundle by the coboundary map $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$.

These are related by a third construction. Beginning with a section of E (that is, with an integer linear combination of *edges* of $\mathscr{X}$), we get a class in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ by the diagonal of the following commutative square:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) \end{array}$$

The referee pointed out to us that the class in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is precisely the obstruction to lifting a section of E to a piecewise linear function. Thus, edge weightings with trivial monodromy lift to piecewise linear functions and those with nontrivial monodromy produce tropical line bundles.

These edge weightings will be used to decorate the example in Figure 7.

Lemma 3.4.3. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve. Then $H^p(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E}) = 0$ for all $p > 0$ and $H^p(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) = 0$ for all $p > 0$.*

Proof. Note first that V is the pushforward along the closed embedding of the vertices of $\mathscr{X}$ of the constant sheaf $\mathbf{Z}$. Therefore, writing $V(\mathscr{X})$ for the set of vertices of $\mathscr{X}$, we have $H^p(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) = H^p(V(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{Z}) = 0$ for all $p > 0$.

Next, note that E is the direct sum of sheaves E_i supported on each of the edges of $\mathscr{X}$. Then E_i is the pushforward along the closed embedding of either an interval or a circle. We can therefore assume that $\mathscr{X}$ is either an interval or a circle.

If $\mathscr{X}$ is an interval then its topology is generated by open subsets and E is flasque, hence has no higher cohomology. If $\mathscr{X}$ is a circle then its universal cover $\mathscr{Y}$ has no self-loops, so E is flasque on $\mathscr{Y}$. Therefore, $H^p(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E})$ can be identified with the group cohomology $H^p(\mathbf{Z}, \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y}))$. The group cohomology of $\mathbf{Z}$ vanishes for $p > 1$ and for $p = 1$ it coincides with the coinvariants of $\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y})$. We identify $\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y})$ with $\prod_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \mathbf{Z}$ with $\mathbf{Z}$ acting by shift. The coinvariants are therefore zero and the lemma is proved. □

Corollary 3.4.4. *If $\mathscr{X}$ is a compact tropical curve then $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{H}) = H_1(\mathscr{X})$ and $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{H}) = H_0(\mathscr{X})$.*

Proof. This is immediate, as $\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X})$ is the free abelian group generated by the edges of $\mathscr{X}$ and $\mathsf{V}(\mathscr{X})$ is the free abelian group generated by the vertices, and the map between them is the boundary map. □

Lemma 3.4.5. *If $\mathscr{X}$ is a compact tropical curve then $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ is an isomorphism.*

Proof. We want to show that on a compact tropical curve, every globally defined linear function is locally constant. Replacing $\overline{M}$ with a valuative submonoid of $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that contains $\overline{M}$ does not change $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ or L. We may therefore assume that $\overline{M}$ is valuative. Let $\mathscr{Z}$ be a maximal connected subgraph where f takes its minimum value. Then if e is a flag of $\mathscr{X}$ exiting $\mathscr{Z}$, the slope of f along e must be positive. But by the balancing condition, $\sum_e \mu(e) = 0$, when the sum is taken over all edges exiting $\mathscr{Z}$. The only way a sum of positive numbers can be zero is if it is empty, so we conclude that $\mathscr{Z}$ is a connected component of $\mathscr{X}$ and that f is locally constant. □

Using Corollary 3.4.4 and Lemma 3.4.5, we write down the long exact sequence in cohomology associated to the short exact sequence in the first two rows of (3.4.1):

$$\begin{gathered} 0 \to H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) \xrightarrow{\deg} H_0(\mathscr{X}) \to 0 \\ \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) \to 0 \end{gathered} \tag{3.4.6}$$

The homomorphism $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) \to H_0(\mathscr{X})$ is called the *degree*. We can also identify $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$.

Lemma 3.4.7. *The homomorphisms*

$$\begin{gathered} H_1(\mathscr{X}) = H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{H}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \quad \text{and} \\ \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X}) = H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \end{gathered} \tag{3.4.7.1}$$

in the exact sequences (3.4.6) are the intersection pairing on $\mathscr{X}$.

Proof. The first homomorphism is induced from the second by restriction to $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \subset \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X})$, so it suffices to consider the second. Suppose that $\alpha \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E})$. We can regard α as an integer-valued function on the edges of $\mathscr{X}$. The class of its coboundary in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is the $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on $\mathscr{X}$ of piecewise linear functions having slopes α along the edges.

Such a torsor is classified by its failure to be representable by a well-defined, piecewise linear function, in the form of its monodromy around the loops of $\mathscr{X}$. In other words, we may make the following identification:

$$H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}). \tag{3.4.7.2}$$

Given $\alpha \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E})$ and a $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, represented as a sum of oriented edges of $\mathscr{X}$, the monodromy of α around γ is

$$\sum_{e \in \gamma} \alpha(e)$$

which is exactly the same as $\alpha \cdot \gamma$. □

We summarize our results in the following corollary, which may be viewed as a tropical Abel theorem.

Corollary 3.4.8. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a compact tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$. Then there are exact sequences in which ∂ is the intersection pairing:*

$$\begin{gathered} 0 \to H_1(\mathscr{X}) \xrightarrow{\partial} \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) \xrightarrow{\deg} H_0(\mathscr{X}) \to 0 \\ \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X}) \xrightarrow{\partial} \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) \to 0 \end{gathered} \tag{3.4.8.1}$$

3.5 Monodromy

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$. Let Q be a PL-torsor on $\mathscr{X}$. By Corollary 3.4.8, there is an $\alpha \in \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ inducing Q, uniquely determined by Q up to addition of $\partial(e)$, for edges e of $\mathscr{X}$. We refer to α as a *monodromy representative* of Q.

Proposition 3.5.1. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a compact, connected tropical curve metrized by* a valuative *monoid $\overline{M}$. The following conditions are equivalent to $Q \in H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$.*

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

(1) *There exists a subdivision $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$ such that the restriction of Q to $\mathscr{Y}$ is trivial.*
(2) *For any monodromy representative α of Q and any $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, the monodromy of α around γ is bounded by the length of γ (in the sense of Definition 2.1.3.1).*

Before we begin the proof, we note that to verify the monodromy condition, it is sufficient to consider a single monodromy representative.

Lemma 3.5.2. *Suppose that α and β are monodromy representatives of the same PL-torsor on a tropical curve $\mathscr{X}$, and let $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$. The monodromy of α around γ is bounded by the length of γ if and only if the monodromy of β around γ is bounded by the length of γ.*

Proof. Since α and β differ by a linear combination of $\partial(e)$, for e among the edges of $\mathscr{X}$, it is sufficient by Lemma 2.1.3.3 to show that $\partial(e)$ has bounded monodromy around each $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$. But the monodromy of $\partial(e)$ around γ is $e.\gamma$. If e is not contained in γ then $e.\gamma = 0$, which is obviously bounded by $\ell(\gamma)$. If e is contained in γ then $e.\gamma = \pm\ell(e)$, and $\ell(e)$ is bounded by $\ell(\gamma)$ because e is contained in γ. □

Lemma 3.5.3. *Suppose that $\tau : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a subdivision of tropical curves. Let α be an element of $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. The monodromy of α around the loops of $\mathscr{X}$ is bounded by their lengths if and only if same holds of the monodromy of $\tau^*\alpha$ around the loops of $\mathscr{Y}$.*

Proof. The length of the loops of $\mathscr{Y}$ is the same as the length of the loops in $\mathscr{X}$ and the monodromy around them is the same as the monodromy around the loops in $\mathscr{X}$. □

Proof of Proposition 3.5.1. Suppose first that Q can be trivialized on a subdivision $\tau : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$. Let $\mu : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ be a monodromy representative of Q. Then μ lies in the image of $\partial : \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y}) \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{Y}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$, so by Lemma 3.5.2, its monodromy around the loops of $\mathscr{Y}$ is certainly bounded by the lengths of the loops. But by Lemma 3.5.3, this implies that μ has the same property.

Now assume that the monodromy of μ around the loops of $\mathscr{X}$ is bounded by their lengths. We construct a subdivision $\tau : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ such that $\tau^*\mu$ is in the image of $\partial : \mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y}) \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{Y}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$.

The proof will be by induction on the rank of the image of the monodromy homomorphism

$$\mu : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}. \tag{3.5.3.1}$$

Our strategy will be to subdivide $\mathscr{X}$ so that $\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{Y})$ enlarges and adjust μ by the addition of elements in its image so that the rank of the image of μ decreases. We therefore permit ourselves to adjust μ as necessary by elements of the image of ∂.

By Proposition 2.1.3.8, there is a filtration

$$0 = V_0 \subset V_1 \subset \cdots \subset \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$$

of ordered subgroups such that each V_n/V_{n-1} may be embedded in $\mathbf{R}$, preserving the ordering. Let n be the largest index such that the image of μ is contained in V_n. If $n = 0$ we are done. Otherwise, choose an embedding of V_n/V_{n-1} in $\mathbf{R}$.

This induces a metric on $\mathscr{X}$ with lengths in $\mathbf{R}$. We write $\overline{\mathscr{X}}$ for the tropical curve obtained by collapsing those edges in $\mathscr{X}$ whose lengths in $\mathbf{R}$ are zero. Note that there is a well-defined monodromy function

$$\overline{\mu} : H_1(\overline{\mathscr{X}}) \to \mathbf{R}$$

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

precisely because the monodromy around $\gamma \in H_1(\overline{\mathscr{X}})$ is bounded by the length of γ. Indeed, $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$ has length δ, and if the image of δ in $\mathbf{R}$ is zero then the boundedness of the monodromy around γ implies that $\overline{\mu}(\gamma) = 0$ as well.

Choose a spanning tree of $\overline{\mathscr{X}}$ and let E be the set of edges of $\overline{\mathscr{X}}$ not in the spanning tree. Each of these edges corresponds uniquely to an edge of $\mathscr{X}$, so we will also think of E as a set of edges of $\mathscr{X}$.

For each $e \in E$, let γ_e be the corresponding basis element of $H_1(\overline{\mathscr{X}})$. Let δ_e be the length of γ_e and let $\mu_e = \overline{\mu}(\gamma_e)$ be the monodromy around it, both valued in $\mathbf{R}$. Since $\delta_e \neq 0$, there is some integer k such that $k\delta_e \leq \mu_e \leq (k+1)\delta_e$. We replace μ by $\mu - k\partial(e)$ so that we may assume that $0 \leq \mu_e < \delta_e$. Note that doing so does not change μ_f for any $f \neq e$. Let $\tau : \mathscr{Y} \to \mathscr{X}$ be a subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$ that divides the edge e into edges e' and e'' of lengths μ_e and $\delta_e - \mu_e$, respectively. Then $\tau^*\mu - \partial(e')$ has no monodromy around γ_e, and the monodromy around all $f \neq e$ in E remains unchanged.

Repeating this procedure for all e in E, we arrive at a representative for the monodromy of Q such that the image of μ in V_n/V_{n-1} is zero. Now we repeat the process with n replaced by $n-1$ until we have replaced μ by 0. □

Corollary 3.5.4. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a compact, connected tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$. Then $Q \in H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$ satisfies condition (2) of Proposition 3.5.1 if and only if it satisfies condition (1) over every valuative extension of $\overline{M}$.*

Proof. Let α be a monodromy representative of Q. The corollary reduces to the assertion that $\alpha \prec \delta$ in $\overline{M}$ if and only $\alpha \prec \delta$ in every valuative extension of $\overline{M}$. For each pair n, m, let $U_{n,m} \subset \operatorname{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ be the set of valuations in which $n\delta < \alpha < m\delta$. By assumption, the $U_{n,m}$ cover $\operatorname{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$. But $\operatorname{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$ is quasicompact, so a finite collection U_{n_i,m_i} suffices to cover it. Taking $n = \min\{n_i\}$ and $m = \max\{m_i\}$ we find that all U_{n_i,m_i} are contained in $U_{n,m}$, so $U_{n,m} = \operatorname{Cone}^\circ(\overline{M})$. Thus, we have $n\delta \leq \alpha \leq m\delta$ in every sharp valuative extension of $\overline{M}$. But $\overline{M}$ is saturated, so an inequality holds in $\overline{M}$ if and only if it holds in every valuative extension of $\overline{M}$. Therefore, $n\delta \leq \alpha \leq m\delta$ and $\alpha \prec \delta$, as required. □

Definition 3.5.5. We say that a homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ on $\mathscr{X}$ has *bounded monodromy* if it satisfies the equivalent conditions of Corollary 3.5.4. We indicate a subgroup of bounded monodromy by decoration with a dagger (†).

3.6 The tropical Jacobian

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$. We construct the tropical Jacobian of $\mathscr{X}$ in a manner covariantly functorial in $\overline{M}$. This effectively constructs the tropical Jacobian relative to the moduli space of tropical curves.

Definition 3.6.1. We define the tropical Jacobian by

$$\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})^{\dagger}/H_1(\mathscr{X}), \tag{3.6.1.1}$$

where the dagger (†) indicates the subgroup of elements with bounded monodromy. (Definition 3.5.5)

Example 3.6.2. When $\overline{M} = \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$, the tropical Jacobian is a real torus. Over a general monoid (that is integral, saturated, and finitely generated), we imagine a family of real tori, parameterized by homomorphisms $\overline{M} \to \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$, and $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X})$ represents the space of sections of this family respecting appropriately defined integral structure.

Now suppose that we have a monoid homomorphism $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$. This induces an edge contraction $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$. We wish to produce a morphism:

$$\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}) \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{Y}). \tag{3.6.3}$$

The edge contraction $\mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ induces a homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H_1(\mathscr{Y})$. Note that if $\mu \in \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X})$ has bounded monodromy then, by definition, the composition

$$H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}} \tag{3.6.4}$$

takes the value zero on all loops of $\mathscr{X}$ contracted in $\mathscr{Y}$. Therefore, the homomorphism factors through $H_1(\mathscr{Y})$, and does so uniquely because $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H_1(\mathscr{Y})$ is surjective. The factorization still has bounded monodromy, since if α is bounded by δ in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ then its image in $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is bounded by the image of δ. We obtain the desired morphism (3.6.3).

It is clear from the construction that it respects compositions of monoid homomorphisms. Following the procedure described in § 2.3.1, we may extend the definition of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X})$ to families. That is, given a family of tropical curves $\mathscr{X}$ over a logarithmic scheme S, we obtain an étale sheaf on the category of logarithmic schemes over S by either of the following equivalent procedures.

(1) If T is an atomic neighborhood of a geometric point t, then we define $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)(T) = \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}_t)$ and sheafify the resulting presheaf.
(2) If T is a logarithmic scheme over S of finite type then an object of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)(T)$ consists of objects of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}_t)$ for each geometric point t that are compatible along geometric generizations. We extend from logarithmic schemes that are of finite type to all logarithmic schemes by the approximation procedure of [EGA, IV.8].

If X is a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S with tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$ then we pose $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S) = \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$.

Example 3.6.3. If S is an atomic logarithmic scheme and $\mathscr{X}$ is a family of tropical curves over S then $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger / H_1(\mathscr{X})$. In particular, $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is typically not representable by an algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure (or a cone stack, in the language of [CCUW20]): if it were then the tropical torus $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$, which is a $H_1(\mathscr{X})$-torsor over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$, would be representable. The proof Proposition 2.2.7.2 shows that it is not.

Example 3.6.4. We illustrate the necessity of the bounded monodromy condition from a tropical perspective; in § 4.18 we will see an algebraic version of the same idea. Our discussion will be somewhat informal, as we simply wish to convey some intuition.

Let C be the nodal curve of genus 2 consisting of two rational curves joined at three nodes. Let S be a smooth surface with a normal crossings divisor $D = D_1 \cup D_2$ consisting of two smooth components meeting at a single point s, and let $X \to S$ be a family of curves smoothing $C \to s$ to a smooth family of curves of genus 2 over $S - D$. We choose X to have smooth total space, and assume that the first and third node smooth out together over D_2, while the second smooths out independently over D_1. Such a family can be constructed, for example, by restricting to a sufficiently small two-parameter subfamily of a versal family of C.

We give $X \to S$ its minimal logarithmic structure, that is, the log structure pulled back from the moduli space of curves and its universal family $\overline{\mathcal{C}}_2 \to \overline{\mathcal{M}}_2$. The logarithmic scheme S has four strata, given by $s, D_1 - s, D_2 - s$, and $S - D$. Restricting to a sufficiently small neighborhood of s if necessary (an atomic neighborhood in the terminology above), the logarithmic structure

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

is globally generated, with

$$\Gamma(S, \overline{M}_S) = \overline{M}_{S,s} = \mathbf{N}^2.$$

The precise construction of the geometric family $X \to S$ is not important: we chose it because it leads to a simple yet interesting tropicalization, which we could have taken as our original input. The tropicalization $\mathscr{X} \to S$ is a family of polyhedral complexes over S, constant on the strata of S, and metrized by the various sheaves of monoids $\overline{M}_{S,t}$ for $t \in S$. Its most interesting fiber is the fiber over the deepest stratum s, where it consists of the dual graph of C, with two vertices v_1, v_2 joined by three edges e_1, e_2, e_3. Each edge has a length δ_i in the monoid $\overline{M}_{S,s} = \mathbf{N}^2$. A picture is shown in Figure 7 for an arbitrary monoid $\overline{M}$. Our assumption that the total space of X is smooth and two of the nodes smooth together, while the other one smooths independently, means that the lengths δ_1 and δ_3 of e_1 and e_3 are equal to each other and one of the generators of $\mathbf{N}^2$, while the length δ_2 of e_2 is the other generator of $\mathbf{N}^2$. We can think of this tropical curve equivalently[2] as a family of traditional tropical curves, with edge lengths in $\mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$, varying over the dual cone $\sigma_s := \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}_{S,s}, \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}) \cong \mathbf{R}^2_{\geq 0}$. The total space of this family thus has three real dimensions. The length of the edge e_i in the fiber over $h = (a, b) \in \sigma$ is simply the evaluation $h(\delta_i)$. With our choices these lengths are a for e_1, e_3 and b for e_2.

As the stratum s generizes to D_1, the edge e_2 and its length δ_2 contract, and we obtain the tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}_{S,t_1} \cong \mathbf{N}$ (with $t_1 \in D_1 - s$) consisting of a single vertex v with two edges e_1, e_3 joining v to itself, both of length the generator of $\mathbf{N}$. Again, we can think of this curve as the total space of a family over $\sigma_{t_1} = \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}_{S,t}, \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}) = \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$. These data are redundant: σ_{t_1} appears as a face of σ_s, and compatibility with generization means that the restriction of $\mathscr{X}_s$ to the face σ_{t_1} agrees with $\mathscr{X}_{t_1}$. Similarly, generizing s to D_2 contracts e_1, e_3, and we have the tropical curve metrized over $\mathbf{N}$ consisting of a single vertex v with one edge e_2, of length the generator again. This can be thought of as the fiber of $\mathscr{X}_s$ over the other one-dimensional face of σ_s. Generizing to $S - D$, the fiber of $\mathscr{X} \to S$ reduces to a point, which we can think of as a point over the 0 face of σ_s. A picture of the tropicalization is shown in Figure 5.

We write $J = \mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$. In order to motivate the bounded monodromy condition, let us accept, for each point $(a, b) \in \sigma_s$, corresponding dually to a homomorphism $\mathbf{N}^2 \to \mathbf{R}$, that the fiber of J over (a, b) should be a real torus, constructed as follows:

$$J_{(a,b)} = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_{(a,b)}), \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0})/\partial H_1(\mathscr{X}_{(a,b)}).$$

More specifically, if $a \neq 0$ then we have the presentation

$$J_{(a,b)} = \mathrm{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}^2, \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0})/\mathbf{Z}(a + b, -b) + \mathbf{Z}(-b, a + b), \tag{3.6.1}$$

whereas if $a = 0$ and $b \neq 0$ we have

$$J_{(0,b)} = \mathrm{Hom}(\mathbf{Z}, \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0})/\mathbf{Z}b \tag{3.6.2}$$

(if $a = b = 0$ then we have $J_{(0,0)} = 0$, of course).

Whatever the definition of the S-points of J, it should have natural specialization maps to $J_{(a,b)}$ for all $(a, b) \in \sigma_s$. The bounded monodromy condition is imposed to guarantee this. In its absence, the 'tropical Jacobian'

$$\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_s), \Gamma(S, \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}))/\partial H_1(\mathscr{X}_s)$$

contains a homomorphism ϕ with $\phi(e_1 - e_2) = 0$ and $\phi(e_2 - e_3) = \delta_2$. Specializing to $a = 0$ (that is, setting $\delta_1 = \delta_3 = 0$), the loop $e_1 - e_3$ is collapsed, yet $\phi(e_1 - e_3)$ is not zero modulo the

[2] To get equivalence, we also need to remember the integral structure $\mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}_{S,s}, \mathbf{N}) \subset \sigma_s$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

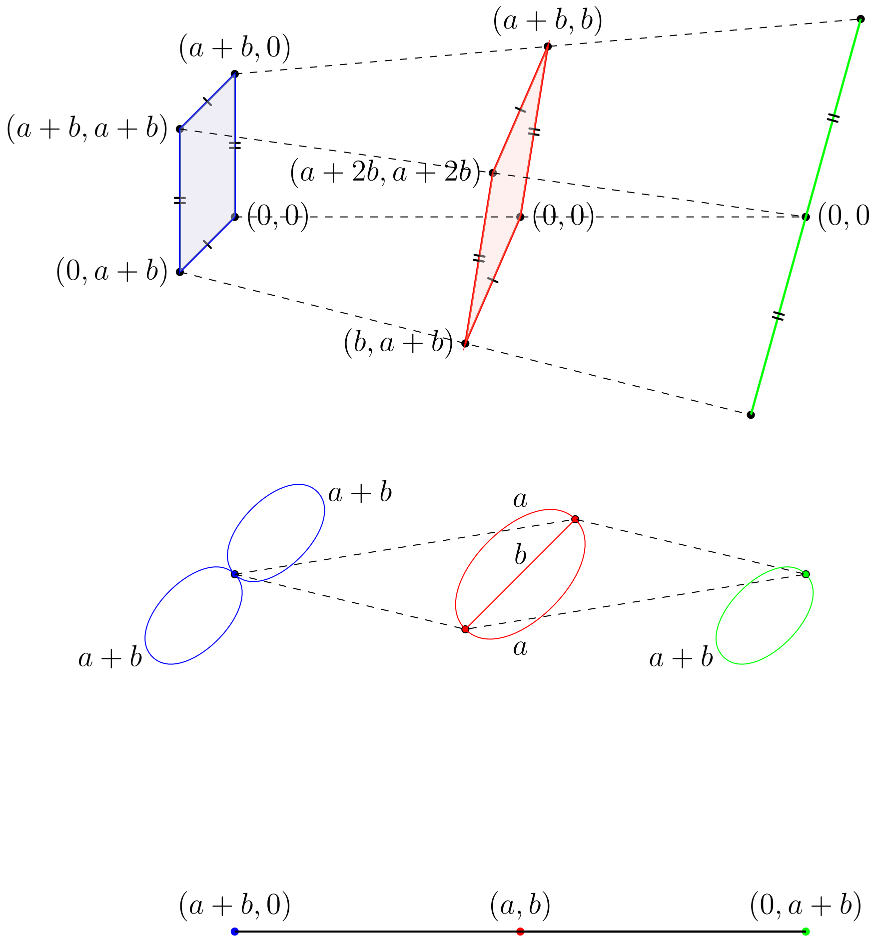


Figure 5. The tropical Jacobian $\operatorname{Tro Jac}(X/S)$ (top) and the tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$ (middle), over the cross-section $x + y = a + b$ of $\sigma_s = \mathbf{R}^2_{\geq 0}$ (bottom).

subgroup generated by $\delta_1 = \delta_3$. In other words, ϕ does not descend to be well defined on $H_1(\mathscr{X}_t)$ when t is a generization of s in D_2.

To correct for this, we demand that when the homomorphism $\phi : H_1(\mathscr{X}_s) \to \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is evaluated on a loop γ the value lies in the subgroup of elements of $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that are mapped to 0 when γ is smoothed. This is precisely the bounded monodromy condition. We observe that, in the example above, the monodromy of ϕ around the loop $\gamma = e_1 - e_3$ is not bounded by the length, $\delta_1 + \delta_3 = 2\delta_1$, of γ, hence it remains nonzero when γ is smoothed.

3.7 The tropical Picard group

Definition 3.7.1. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$. We say that an element of $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ has bounded monodromy if its image in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$ has bounded monodromy (which means that it is the image of a class of bounded monodromy in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$). For each $d \in H_0(\mathscr{X})$, we write $\operatorname{Tro Pic}^d(\mathscr{X})$ for the preimage of d under the degree homomorphism $\operatorname{Tro Pic}(\mathscr{X}) \subset H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) \xrightarrow{\deg} H_0(\mathscr{X})$ from Corollary 3.4.8.

We define $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ to be category of L-torsors whose classes in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ have bounded monodromy, and we define $\operatorname{Tro Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ to be the set of isomorphism classes of $\operatorname{Tro Pic}(\mathscr{X})$. Objects of $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ are called *tropical line bundles* on $\mathscr{X}$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

The main task of this subsection is to describe the functoriality of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ with respect to the monoid $\overline{M}$.

LEMMA 3.7.2. *A class in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ has bounded monodromy if and only if it is the sum of a class in the image of $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V})$ and a class of bounded monodromy in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ (under the maps induced from diagram (3.4.1)).*

Proof. This follows from the commutativity of diagram (3.7.5.3) below, and its exactness in the second row (which is the long exact sequence associated to the middle column of (3.4.1)):

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} & & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) & = & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \\ & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) \end{array} \tag{3.7.1}$$

□

We will obtain the functoriality of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ from naturally defined functorial operations on PL and V. We begin by summarizing these.

PROPOSITION 3.7.3. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$, let $u : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ be a homomorphism of monoids, and let $\sigma : \mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ be the induced edge contraction. Let $\mathsf{D}_{\mathscr{X}}$ and $\mathsf{D}_{\mathscr{Y}}$ be the diagrams (3.4.1) on $\mathscr{X}$ and on $\mathscr{Y}$, respectively.*

(i) *There is a unique homomorphism $\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y})$, sending $f \in \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X})$ to $\overline{f} \in \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y})$ such that $\overline{f}(\sigma(x)) = f(x)$ whenever x is not contracted in $\mathscr{Y}$.*
(ii) *There is a unique homomorphism $\mathsf{V}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathsf{V}(\mathscr{Y})$ by sending the basis vector $[x]$ to $[\sigma(x)]$.*
(iii) *The homomorphisms above commute with the quotient map $\mathsf{PL} \to \mathsf{V}$.*

Proof. (i) The uniqueness is evident, since every $y \in \mathscr{Y}$ is the image of some $x \in \mathscr{X}$ that is not contracted. To check the existence, assume that x is a flag of $\mathscr{X}$ that is contracted in $\mathscr{Y}$ and $f(x) = (\alpha, \mu)$. Then $\alpha(i(x)) - \alpha(x) \in \mathbf{Z}\ell(x)$ and $\ell(x)$ lies in the kernel of u (because x is contracted), so $u(\alpha(i(x))) = u(\alpha(x))$. Therefore, $u \circ f$ is constant on the regions contracted by σ and descends to $\mathscr{Y}$.

(ii) Immediate.

(iii) We argue that the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X}) & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{V}(\mathscr{X}) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{Y}) & \longrightarrow & \mathsf{V}(\mathscr{Y}) \end{array} \tag{3.7.3.1}$$

Let $f = (\alpha, \mu)$ be a piecewise linear function on $\mathscr{X}$. The coefficient of v in the image of f in $\mathsf{V}(\mathscr{X})$ is $\sum_{r(e)=v} \mu(e)$. Therefore, the image of f in $\mathsf{V}(\mathscr{Y})$, going around the top and right of (3.7.3.1), is $\sum_{f(v)=w} \sum_{r(e)=v} \mu(e)$. In this sum, each edge of the contracted locus appears twice, with opposite orientations, and each edge exiting the contracted locus appears once, oriented out. The sum therefore reduces to $\sum_{r(e)=w} \mu(e)$, which is what we get from following f around the bottom and left of the diagram. □

COROLLARY 3.7.4. *Diagram (3.4.1) is natural with respect to weighted edge contractions.*

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proposition 3.7.5. *Let $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ be a homomorphism of commutative monoids inducing an edge contraction $\mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ of tropical curves. Then the maps*

$$H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) \to H^0(\mathscr{Y}, \mathsf{V}) \to H^1(\mathscr{Y}, \overline{N})^\dagger \quad \textit{and}$$
$$H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M})^\dagger \to H^1(\mathscr{Y}, \overline{N})^\dagger \tag{3.7.5.1}$$

agree on their common domain of definition and combine to define a map:

$$H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})^\dagger \to H^1(\mathscr{Y}, \mathsf{L})^\dagger. \tag{3.7.5.2}$$

Proof. Diagram (3.4.1) induces the following commutative square:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) & \longrightarrow & H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})^\dagger \\ \| & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \| \\ H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) & \longrightarrow & H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})^\dagger \end{array} \tag{3.7.5.3}$$

Suppose that $u \in H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$ is the image of some $v \in H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger$ and $w \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V})$. Then the image of u in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$ must vanish. This is also the image of v, so that v is the image of some $x \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E})$. The difference between w and the image of x maps to 0 in $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L})$, hence is the image of some $y \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$. Replacing w by $w - y$, we discover that we must show the two maps in question agree on $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E})$.

We can define a map sending an edge x to itself if it is not contracted in $\mathscr{Y}$, and to 0 if it is contracted:

$$H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{E}) \to H^0(\mathscr{Y}, \mathsf{E}). \tag{3.7.5.4}$$

This commutes with the maps to $H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V})$ and $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. □

3.8 The tropical Picard stack

The construction in Proposition 3.7.5 can be categorified to operate on L-torsors with bounded monodromy, and not merely their isomorphism classes. Given an edge contraction $\sigma : \mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ associated to a homomorphism of monoids $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ and an L-torsor Q on $\mathscr{X}$ with bounded monodromy, we wish to produce an L-torsor on $\mathscr{Y}$ in a canonical way.

Using the following lemma, we may promote σ to be a morphism of sites.

Lemma 3.8.1. *Let $\sigma : \mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ be an edge contraction induced from a homomorphism $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$. Let $\mathscr{V} \to \mathscr{Y}$ be a local isomorphism. Then the set-theoretic fiber product $\mathscr{U} = \mathscr{V} \times_{\mathscr{Y}} \mathscr{X}$ is naturally equipped with the structure of a tropical curve and the projection $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a local isomorphism.*

Proof. The involution i and the partially defined function r on $\mathscr{U}$ are induced from those on $\mathscr{X}$, $\mathscr{Y}$, and $\mathscr{V}$ and their compatibility. The metric ℓ is induced from the projection to $\mathscr{X}$. We must verify that $r(u) = u$ if and only if $i(u) = u$ if and only if $\ell(u) = 0$ for all $u \in \mathscr{U}$. Indeed, $r(u) = u$ if and only if $i(u) = u$ because this property holds in $\mathscr{V}$ and in $\mathscr{X}$. If $\ell(u) = 0$ in $\mathscr{U}$ then by definition, $\ell(u) = 0$ in $\mathscr{X}$ and therefore in $\mathscr{Y}$ as well; since $\mathscr{V} \to \mathscr{Y}$ is a local isomorphism, this implies $\ell(u) = 0$ in $\mathscr{V}$, so $r(u) = u$ in both $\mathscr{X}$ and in $\mathscr{V}$; by definition, this implies $r(u) = u$ in $\mathscr{V}$.

To see that $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ is a local isomorphism, let u be a vertex of $\mathscr{U}$ and denote by x, y, and v its images in $\mathscr{X}$, $\mathscr{Y}$, and $\mathscr{V}$. Let $\mathscr{S}_x$, $\mathscr{S}_y$, $\mathscr{S}_u$, and $\mathscr{S}_v$ denote their stars. Then $\mathscr{S}_v$ bijects onto $\mathscr{S}_y$, by the assumption that $\mathscr{V} \to \mathscr{Y}$ is a local isomorphism. Therefore, $\sigma^{-1}\mathscr{S}_v$ maps isomorphically

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

onto $\sigma^{-1}\mathscr{S}_y$. But $\mathscr{S}_u \subset \sigma^{-1}\mathscr{S}_v$ and $\mathscr{S}_x \subset \sigma^{-1}\mathscr{S}_y$, so that $\mathscr{S}_u$ maps isomorphically onto $\mathscr{S}_x$, as required. □

The lemma shows that if $\mathscr{V} \to \mathscr{Y}$ is a local isomorphism, then $\sigma^{-1}\mathscr{V} \to \mathscr{X}$ is also a local isomorphism. It is immediate that σ^{-1} respects fiber products and covers, so we obtain a morphism of sites $\sigma : \mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$.

We construct the desired functor $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{Y})$ by working locally. We write $\sigma_* \mathsf{BL}^{\dagger}_{\mathscr{X}}$ for the substack of those $Q \in \sigma_* \mathsf{BL}_{\mathscr{X}}(\mathscr{V})$ such that Q has bounded monodromy on $\sigma^{-1}\mathscr{U}$ for each local isomorphism $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{Y}$. Note, however, that bounded monodromy is not a local condition in general.

PROPOSITION 3.8.2. *There is a morphism*

$$\sigma_* \mathsf{BL}^{\dagger}_{\mathscr{X}} \to \mathsf{BL}_{\mathscr{Y}} \tag{3.8.2.1}$$

inducing the morphisms in Proposition 3.7.5.

Proof. Provided we do so compatibly with restriction, it is sufficient to work locally in $\mathscr{Y}$. We can therefore assume that $\mathscr{Y}$ is either a single edge or has a single vertex with a number of edges attached to it at only one side. In the former case, $\mathscr{X}$ is also a single edge and $\sigma : \mathscr{X} \to \mathscr{Y}$ is an isomorphism, because σ is an edge contraction. We therefore assume that $\mathscr{Y}$ is a single vertex with edges radiating from it. We note that in this case, $\mathscr{Y}$ has no nontrivial covers, so that we only need to construct (3.8.2.1) on global sections:

$$\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{Y}). \tag{3.8.2.2}$$

Let us write L' for the sheaf of $\overline{N}$-valued linear functions on $\mathscr{X}$ and $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})'$ for the category of L'-torsors on $\mathscr{X}$ of bounded monodromy. Since every edge of $\mathscr{X}$ that is contracted by σ has length 0 in $\overline{N}$ (by definition), $\mathsf{L}' = \sigma^* \mathsf{L}_{\mathscr{Y}}$. In particular, L' is constant with value $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ on the preimage of the vertex of $\mathscr{Y}$. The quotient $\mathsf{L}'/\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a constant $\mathbf{Z}$ on the edges of $\mathscr{X}$ not contracted by σ and therefore has vanishing H^1. We may therefore make the identifications

$$H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}') = H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}). \tag{3.8.2.3}$$

But every loop of $\mathscr{X}$ has length 0 when measured in $\overline{N}$, so that a homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ of bounded monodromy must be 0. Therefore, $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}')^{\dagger} = 0$ and $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})' = \mathrm{B}\Gamma(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}')$. Observing now that $\mathsf{L}'(\mathscr{X}) = \mathsf{L}(\mathscr{Y})$, we conclude that $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})' = \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{Y})$. The sought-after morphism (3.8.2.2) now arises as the composition

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}) & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})' & \xleftarrow{\sim} & \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{Y}) \\ \| & & \| & & \| \\ \Gamma(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{BL})^{\dagger} & \longrightarrow & \Gamma(\mathscr{X}, \mathrm{B}\sigma^*\mathsf{L})^{\dagger} & \longleftarrow & \Gamma(\mathscr{Y}, \mathsf{BL})^{\dagger} \end{array} \tag{3.8.2.4}$$

□

We leave it to the reader to verify that the morphism of Proposition 3.8.2 is compatible with composition of homomorphisms of monoids. We can now define the tropical Picard group in families, using the process described in § 2.3.1. If $\mathscr{X}$ is a family of tropical curves over a logarithmic scheme S, we obtain a stack $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ on the large étale site of S characterized by either of the following two descriptions.

(1) If T is an atomic neighborhood of a geometric point t, then $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)(T) = \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}_t)$, and in general $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ is the stackification of the category fibered in groupoids arising from this definition.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

(2) If T is a logarithmic scheme over S and T is of finite type then the objects of $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)(T)$ consist of a tropical line bundle Q_t on $\mathscr{X}_t$ for each geometric point t such that, for any geometric specialization $t \rightsquigarrow t'$, the line bundle $Q_{t'}$ induces Q_t by way of the edge contraction $\mathscr{X}_{t'} \to \mathscr{X}_t$ and Proposition 3.8.2. One extends to general logarithmic schemes using finite type approximations.

3.9 Prorepresentability and subdivisions

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by a monoid $\overline{M}$. We saw in § 3.6 that the tropical Jacobian can be regarded as a functor of pairs $(\overline{N}, u)$ where $u : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a homomorphism of monoids. This functor is not representable, as we saw in Example 3.6.3. However, it is not that far from being representable: it is the quotient of a prorepresentable functor by a discrete group.

Proposition 3.9.1. *The functor* $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ *is prorepresentable on* $\overline{M}/\mathbf{Mon}$ *by the system of all submonoids* $\overline{P}$ *of* $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$ *(direct sum) with the following properties:*

(1) $\overline{P}$ *is finitely generated over* $\overline{M}$*;*
(2) *for each* $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$ *we have* $\gamma \prec \ell(\gamma)$ *in* $\overline{P}$*.*

Proof. Note that the second property implies that $\overline{P}$ generates $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$ as a group. Indeed, if $\gamma \prec \ell(\gamma)$ then $\gamma - n\ell(\gamma) \in \overline{P}$ for some integer n; as $\ell(\gamma) \in \overline{M} \subset \overline{P}$, this implies $\gamma \in \overline{P}$.

Let I be the diagram of all $\overline{P}$ with the indicated properties. Let $F = \varinjlim_{\overline{P} \in I} \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{P}, -)$ be the pro-object they represent. Certainly, if $\overline{P} \in I$ then a homomorphism $\overline{P} \to \overline{N}$ commuting with the morphisms from $\overline{M}$ induces an object of $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{N})^\dagger$ by passing to the associated group. This gives us a morphism $F \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ that we would like to show is an isomorphism.

Suppose that $\mu : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a homomorphism with bounded monodromy. Combining this with the structural homomorphism $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$, we get a homomorphism of monoids $\nu : \overline{M} + H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Choose a basis $e_1, \ldots, e_g$ of $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. For each i, there are integers n and m such that $n\nu(\ell(e_i)) \le \nu(e_i) \le m\nu(\ell(e_i))$ in $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. That is $e_i - n\ell(e_i)$ and $m\ell(e_i) - e_i$ both lie in the preimage of $\overline{N}$ under ν. We take $\overline{P}$ to be the submonoid of $\overline{M} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$ generated by $\overline{M}$ and the $e_i - n\ell(e_i)$ and $m\ell(e_i) - e_i$. Then, by construction, $\overline{P}$ is finitely generated over $\overline{M}$, generates $\overline{M} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$ as a group, has bounded monodromy, and induces μ via ν.

This shows that $F \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ is surjective. To see that it is also injective, consider a second map $\overline{Q} \to \overline{N}$ inducing μ as above, with $\overline{Q} \in I$. Then $\overline{Q} \cap \overline{P}$ is also in I and the map $\overline{Q} \cap \overline{P} \to \overline{N}$ induced from either $\overline{Q} \to \overline{N}$ or $\overline{P} \to \overline{N}$ – they must be the same because the induced maps on associated groups is the same – represents the same object of $F(\overline{N})$. This proves the injectivity and completes the proof. □

Let us now assume that $\overline{M}$ is finitely generated. There is no loss of generality in doing so, since we only care about the set of lengths of the edges of $\mathscr{X}$, which is in any case a finitely generated submonoid.

It is then dual to a rational polyhedral cone σ, and the category of monoids that are finitely generated relative to $\overline{M}$ is contravariantly equivalent to the category $\mathbf{RPC}/\sigma$ of rational polyhedral cones over σ. These observations permit us to reinterpret Proposition 3.9.1 dually, to the effect that $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ is representable by an ind-object of $\mathbf{RPC}/\sigma$.

Rational polyhedral cones are finitely generated, saturated, convex regions in lattices, so we can interpret ind-rational polyhedral cones as not necessarily finitely generated, saturated, convex regions in torsion-free abelian groups. Actually, Proposition 3.9.1 gives a pro-object of $\overline{M}/\mathbf{Mon}$ whose associated group is constant, so that it is represented dually by a saturated, convex region in the lattice $\mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}, \mathbf{Z}) \times H^1(\mathscr{X})$. The following corollary specifies which.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

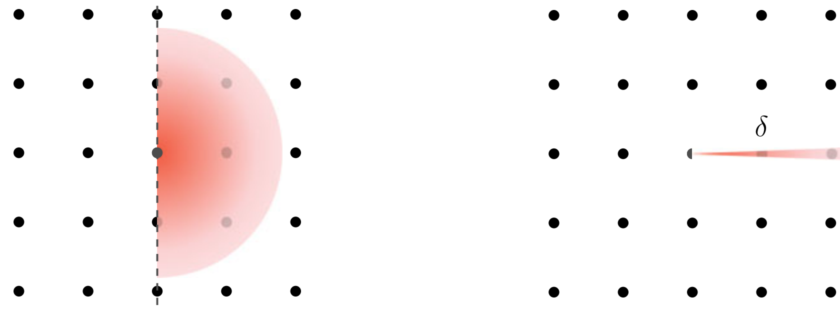


FIGURE 6. The universal cover of the tropical Jacobian of a loop of circumference $\delta \in \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$ (left) and the pro-monoid that represents it (right).

COROLLARY 3.9.2. *The functor* $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ *is ind-representable by the collection* τ *of pairs* $(u, v) \in \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}, \mathbf{Z}) \times \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{Z})$ *such that* $u(\overline{M}) \geq 0$, *and, whenever* $u(\ell(\gamma)) = 0$ *for some* $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, *we also have* $v(\gamma) = 0$.

Proof. Let I denote the pro-$\overline{M}$-monoid consisting of all $\overline{P} \subset \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times H_1(\mathscr{X})$ such that $\overline{P}$ is finitely generated over $\overline{M}$ and $\gamma \prec \ell(\gamma)$ in $\overline{P}$ for all $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$ (as in Proposition 3.9.1). Let J denote the ind-rational polyhedral cone consisting of all (u, v) such that $u(\overline{M}) \geq 0$ and $u(\ell(\gamma)) = 0$ implies $v(\gamma) = 0$. We wish to show that I and J are dual.

Since I is closed under finite intersections and J is closed under finite unions, it is sufficient to demonstrate the duality on the level of rays in $\mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{Z})$ and the corresponding half-spaces in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times H_1(\mathscr{X})$. That is, we need to show that $(u, v) \in \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{Z})$ having the properties $u(\overline{M}) \geq 0$ and $u(\ell(\gamma)) = 0$ implies $v(\gamma) = 0$ if and only if $\overline{M} \subset (u, v)^\vee$ and $\gamma \prec \ell(\gamma)$ in $(u, v)^\vee$. But this is immediate: $u(\overline{M}) \geq 0$ means precisely that $\overline{M} \subset (u, v)^\vee$; likewise, $\gamma \prec \ell(\gamma)$ in the half-space $(u, v)^\vee$ means either that $u(\ell(\gamma)) = v(\gamma) = 0$ or that $u(\ell(\gamma)) > 0$, which is equivalent to the property that $u(\ell(\gamma)) = 0$ implies $v(\gamma) = 0$. □

Example 3.9.3. Consider a loop $\mathscr{X}$ of circumference δ, metrized by the monoid $\mathbf{N}\delta$. Figure 6 gives a visual representation of the ind-rational polyhedral cone representing $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$ on the left side, and of the pro-monoid representing it on the right. On the left, the cone is the union of the origin and the strict right half plane; on the right, it is an infinitesimal thickening of the positive horizontal axis.

The real points of the tropical Jacobian can be seen by dividing the picture on the left by $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \simeq \mathbf{Z}$, which acts by vertical translation: $(x, y) \mapsto (x, y + x)$.

The advantage of working with cones instead of monoids is that we can see subdivisions rather explicitly.

COROLLARY 3.9.4. *Subdivisions of* $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ *by representable functors are in bijection with subdivisions of the cone* τ *defined in Corollary 3.9.2.*

Proof. This is entirely a matter of unwinding definitions. Suppose first that T is a subdivision of τ by rational polyhedral cones. Then for every rational polyhedral cone σ and morphism $\sigma \to \tau$, the fiber product $T \times_\tau \sigma$ is a subdivision of σ. But τ represents $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$, so that if h_T is the functor represented by T then $h_T \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ is representable by subdivisions.

Suppose conversely that $h_T \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$ is representable by subdivisions, where T is a cone complex. For any finitely generated subcone σ of τ, the fiber product $h_\sigma \times_{h_\tau} h_T$ is representable by a subdivision of σ. It is immediate from this that T is a subdivision of τ. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Corollary 3.9.5. *Subdivisions of* $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X})$ *by cone spaces [CCUW20] correspond to* $H_1(\mathscr{X})$*-equivariant subdivisions of the cone* τ *of Corollary 3.9.2.*

Proof. This is immediate, since subdivisions of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X})$ are the same as $H_1(\mathscr{X})$-equivariant subdivisions of $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathsf{PL})^\dagger$. □

3.10 Boundedness of moduli

Our definition of boundedness is a natural adaptation to logarithmic schemes of the schematic notion [Gro95, Définition 1.1].

Definition 3.10.1. A moduli problem F over logarithmic schemes over S is said to be *bounded* if, locally in S, there is a logarithmic scheme T of finite type over S and a morphism $T \to F$ that is surjective on valuative geometric points.

In this subsection and the next, we will work with a bit more generality than necessary for the application to the tropical Jacobian. The boundedness results we obtain apply to tropical abelian varieties as well.

Definition 3.10.2. Let $\partial : H \to \operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ be a pairing on a finitely generated free abelian group H, valued in a partially ordered abelian group $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We say that ∂ is *positive semidefinite* if, $\partial(e) \cdot e \geq 0$ for all $e \in H$ and $\partial(e) \cdot f \prec \partial(e) \cdot e$ for all $e, f \in H$. We will call it *positive definite* if $\partial(e) \cdot e = 0$ only for $e = 0$. Accordingly, we refer to the quadratic function $\ell(f) = \partial(f) \cdot f$ as a *positive semidefinite quadratic form* or a *positive definite quadratic form*.

Remark 3.10.3. If ∂ is a positive semidefinite pairing on H, valued in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and $\psi : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a monoid homomorphism, then $\psi\partial$ is a positive semidefinite pairing valued in $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Moreover, if ∂ is positive semidefinite, then ∂ descends to a positive definite pairing on $H/\{e \in H \mid \ell(e) = 0\}$. Combining these observations, suppose that ∂ is positive definite and let $H_\psi = \{\gamma \in H \mid \psi(\ell(\gamma)) = 0\}$. Then ∂ descends to a positive definite pairing on H/H_ψ, valued in $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

Theorem 3.10.4. *Let* $\partial : H \to \operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ *be a positive definite bilinear pairing over a logarithmic scheme* S *of finite type. Then* $\operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger/\partial H$ *is bounded.*

Proof. We write ℓ for the quadratic form $\ell(f) = \partial(f).f$. The assertion of the theorem is local to the constructible and étale topologies on S, so we may assume S has constant characteristic monoid.

Lemma 3.10.4.1. *Let* $\ell : H \to \overline{M}$ *be a positive definite quadratic form, where* H *is a lattice of finite rank and* $\overline{M}$ *is finitely generated. There is a finite set* $C \subset H$ *such that* $\mu \in \operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ *lies in* $\operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$ *if and only if* $\mu(f) \prec \ell(f)$ *for all* $f \in C$*. The set* C *may be chosen to include a basis of* H_u *(notation as in Remark 3.10.3) for every monoid homomorphism* $u : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$*.*

Proof. The subgroup H_u depends only on the minimal localization homomorphism through which u factors. Since $\overline{M}$ is finitely generated, there are only finitely many distinct localization homomorphisms $\psi : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$. For each of these localizations, let $H_\psi = \{x \in H \mid \psi(\ell(x)) = 0\}$. Let C_ψ be a finite set of generators of H_ψ, as an abelian group, and let $C = \bigcup C_\psi$. Since every H_u appears in this list, C_u contains a basis of every H_u.

We will demonstrate that if $u : \overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ is a monoid homomorphism, and $\mu : H \to \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a group homomorphism such that $\mu(x) \prec u(\ell(x))$ for all $x \in C$, then $\mu(x) \prec u(\ell(x))$ for all $x \in H$. The condition $\mu(x) \prec u(\ell(x))$ is equivalent to the condition that $\mu(x)$ maps to 0 when $\overline{N}$ is

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

localized by $u(\ell(x))$. We have a commutative square

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \overline{M} & \xrightarrow{u} & \overline{N} \\ \psi \downarrow & & \downarrow \varphi \\ \overline{M}[-\ell(x)]^\sharp & \longrightarrow & \overline{N}[-u(\ell(x))]^\sharp \end{array}$$

By definition of H_ψ, we have $\psi(\ell(H_\psi)) = 0$. By assumption, we have $\mu(y) \prec \ell(y)$ for all $y \in C_\psi$, so $\varphi(\mu(H_\psi)) = 0$. We certainly have $x \in H_\psi$, so we conclude $\varphi(\mu(x)) = 0$, as required. □

Choose C as in Lemma 3.10.4.1 and enlarge it if necessary so that it generates H as an abelian group. For each pair of integers m and n, let $Z_{m,n}$ be the set of all $\mu : H \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ such that $m\ell(f) \le \mu(f) \le n\ell(f)$ for all $f \in C$.

LEMMA 3.10.4.2. *For all m and n, the functor $Z_{m,n}$ is bounded.*

Proof. Let $\mathcal{A} = [\mathbf{A}^1/\mathbf{G}_m]$, with its toric logarithmic structure. Note that $\mathcal{A}$ is the locus of $t \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ such that $t \ge 0$. For each $f \in C$, we obtain a pair of maps $Z_{m,n} \to \mathcal{A}$:

$$\alpha_f(\mu) = \mu(f) - m\ell(f)$$
$$\beta_f(\mu) = n\ell(f) - \mu(f)$$

Since C generates H as an abelian group, the tuple $(\alpha_f, \beta_f)_{f \in C} : Z_{m,n} \to (\mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{A})^{|C|}$ is a monomorphism. The image is cut out by the relations $\alpha_f(\mu) + \beta_f(\mu) = (n-m)\ell(f)$ and finitely many other equalities induced from the relations among the $f \in C$ determined by the group structure of H. There are finitely many such relations, and each one imposes an open condition on $(\mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{A})^{|C|}$, so $Z_{m,n}$ is representable by an open substack of $(\mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{A})^{|C|}$, and, in particular, is bounded. □

Remark 3.10.4.3. The proof of the lemma actually shows that $Z_{m,n}$ is representable by an Artin cone.

With C as above, we choose $b \in \mathbf{Z}$ such that $-b\ell(f) \le \partial(e) \cdot f \le b\ell(f)$ for all $e, f \in C$ (such a b exists by the finiteness of C and the definition of a positive definite pairing). We then take Z to be the set of $\mu \in \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ such that

$$-r(bg+1)\ell(f) \le \mu(f) \le r(bg+1)\ell(f) \tag{3.10.4.4}$$

is satisfied for all $f \in C$, with r being the rank of the abelian group $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. In other words, $Z = Z_{m,n}$ with $m = n = r(bg+1)\ell(f)$, so Z is bounded by Lemma 3.10.4.2.

To complete the proof of Theorem 3.10.4, we need to show that the valuative geometric points of some Z surject onto those of $\mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger/\partial H$ under the projection $Z \subset \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger \to \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger/\partial H$. We shall therefore assume that $\overline{M}_S$ is valuative. Note that passing to a valuation of $\overline{M}_S$ does not change $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, so $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is still finitely generated. Let

$$0 = \overline{N}_0 \subset \overline{N}_1 \subset \cdots \subset \overline{N}_k = \overline{M}_S$$

be the filtration guaranteed by Proposition 2.1.3.8. It is finite because Lemma 2.1.2.8 implies that each $\overline{N}_i$ is determined by its associated subgroup of $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a finitely generated abelian group, hence noetherian. In fact, the length, k, of this filtration is bounded by the rank, r, of $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. For each i, let H_i be the subgroup of $\gamma \in H$ such that $\ell(\gamma) \in \overline{N}_i$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

We now proceed by induction on the length of this filtration. We argue that *if* μ *is an element of* $\mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})$ *with bounded monodromy then there exist some* $\gamma \in H$ *and some* ζ *such that* $-(g+1)\ell(f) \leq \zeta(f) \leq (g+1)\ell(f)$ *for all* $f \in C$*, and* $\mu - \zeta - \partial(\gamma)$ *takes values in* $\overline{N}_{i-1}$.

By composition with the homomorphism $q : \overline{N}_i \to \overline{N}_i/\overline{N}_{i-1}$, we obtain a map

$$\mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger \to \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger. \tag{3.10.4.5}$$

The important point here is that if $\mu \in \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})$ has bounded monodromy then $q\mu$ also has bounded monodromy, in the sense that $q\mu(\alpha) \prec q\ell(\alpha)$ where $\ell(\alpha) \in \overline{M}_S$ denotes the length of α. Let us write $\overline{\mu}$ for the image of μ in $\overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$, as well as $\overline{\ell}$ for the length function taking values in $\overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and $\overline{\partial}$ for the reduction of the pairing ∂ modulo $\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Finally, let $\overline{H} = H_i/H_{i-1}$ and note that $\overline{\partial}$ and $\overline{\ell}$ are well defined and positive definite on $\overline{H}$.

By Proposition 2.1.3.8, the totally ordered abelian group $\overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is archimedean, hence admits an order-preserving inclusion in $\mathbf{R}$ by Theorem 2.1.3.6. Since $\overline{\mu} \in \mathrm{Hom}(\overline{H}, \mathbf{R})$, and $\overline{\partial}(\overline{H}) \subset \mathrm{Hom}(H, \mathbf{R})$ is a lattice (because ∂ is positive definite), and C contains a set of generators of $\overline{H}$, it is possible to write $\overline{\mu} = \alpha + \partial(\gamma)$ for some $\gamma \in H$ and some $\alpha = \sum a_i \partial(e_i)$ with $0 \leq a_i \leq 1$ for all i, and with the $e_i \in C$. Now, evaluating α on $f \in C$, we get

$$\alpha(f) = \sum_{i=1}^{g} a_i \partial(e_i) \cdot f. \tag{3.10.4.6}$$

But we have $-b\ell(f) \leq \partial(e_i) \cdot f \leq b\ell(f)$ for all $f \in C$, so we obtain

$$-bg\overline{\ell}(f) \leq \alpha(f) \leq bg\overline{\ell}(f). \tag{3.10.4.7}$$

Note now that $\alpha = \overline{\mu} - \partial(\gamma)$, which is in $\mathrm{Hom}(\overline{H}, \mathbf{R})$ by construction, is actually in the image of $\mathrm{Hom}(\overline{H}, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Using the fact that $\overline{H}$ is free, we can lift and extend α to some $\zeta \in \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$ such that $\zeta(H) \subset \overline{N}_i$ and $\zeta(H_{i-1}) = 0$. This ensures that ζ lies in the bounded monodromy subgroup $\mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger \subset \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})$.

Lemma 3.10.4.8. *The lift* ζ *chosen above lies in* $\mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger$.

Proof. If $\ell(f) \in \overline{N}_{i-1}$ we have $\zeta(f) = 0$ so certainly $\zeta(f)$ is bounded by *all* of $\overline{N}$, and in particular by $\ell(f)$. If $\ell(f) \notin \overline{N}_{i-1}$ then Proposition 2.1.3.8 implies that *all* of $\overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and in particular $\zeta(f)$, is bounded by $\ell(f)$. □

Suppose that $f \in C$. Inequality (3.10.4.7) lifts to

$$-bg\ell(f) - u \leq \zeta(f) \leq bg\ell(f) + v \tag{3.10.4.9}$$

for some $u, v \in \overline{N}_{i-1}$. If $\zeta(f) \neq 0$ then $\overline{\ell}(f)$ is a positive element of $\overline{N}_i^{\mathrm{gp}}/\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Both u and v lie in $\overline{N}_{i-1}$, so u and v are both dominated by $\ell(f)$ by Proposition 2.1.3.8. In particular, $u \leq \ell(f)$ and $v \leq \ell(f)$. Substituting this into (3.10.4.9), we obtain

$$-(bg+1)\ell(f) \leq \zeta(f) \leq (bg+1)\ell(f) \tag{3.10.4.10}$$

as desired.

We have now shown that $\mu - \partial(\gamma) - \zeta$ takes values in $\overline{N}_{i-1}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Repeating this process once for each of the k steps of the filtration (3.10.4.5), we obtain $\mu - \sum \partial(\gamma_i) - \sum_{i=1}^{k} \zeta_i = 0$. Thus, $\zeta = \sum \zeta_i$ represents μ in $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ and, as each ζ_i satisfies (3.10.4.10) and $k \leq r$, their sum satisfies (3.10.4.4), so $\zeta \in Z(S)$. □

Corollary 3.10.5. *If* $\mathscr{X}$ *is a compact tropical curve over* S *then* $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ *is bounded over* S.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be the tropicalization of X. The assertion is local to the constructible topology and to the étale topology on S, so we can assume that the logarithmic structure on S has constant characteristic monoid and that the dual graph of X is also constant. After these restrictions, we have the exact sequence

$$0 \to H_1(\mathscr{X}) \xrightarrow{\partial} \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^{\dagger} \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0 \tag{3.10.5.1}$$

by definition of the tropical Jacobian. Since ∂ requires only a finite number of elements of $\overline{M}_S$ to describe, we may assume that $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a finitely generated abelian group. Since the intersection pairing of a tropical curve is positive definite, we may now apply Theorem 3.10.4 to conclude. □

COROLLARY 3.10.6. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a compact tropical curve over S. Then $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^d(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is quasicompact over S for all $d \in H_0(\mathscr{X})$.*

Proof. As $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^d(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is a torsor under $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^0(\mathscr{X}/S)$ by Corollary 3.4.8, it is sufficient to assume $d = 0$. But $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^0(\mathscr{X}/S) = \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ by Corollary 3.10.6, so the conclusion follows from Corollary 3.10.5. □

3.11 Boundedness of the diagonal

The main point of this subsection is to demonstrate that the lattice defined by a positive definite matrix of real numbers is discrete and that this is also valid as the lattice varies in a tropical family. We make use of the tropical topology defined in § 2.3.2.

These results are also demonstrated by a different method as part of the proof of [KKN08b, Proposition 4.5]. The proof appears in [KKN08c, Lemma 5.2.7] and [KKN08b, § 9.4]. Unlike the present proof, that proof does not rely on the tropical topology, but it ultimately comes down to a compactness argument, as this one does.

THEOREM 3.11.1. *Let H be a finitely generated free abelian group, let $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ be a finitely generated, partially ordered abelian group, and let $\partial : H \to \operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ be a positive definite pairing. For each $\phi : H \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that is bounded by ∂, there are at most finitely many $\gamma \in H$ for which there exists a sharp homomorphism $\overline{M} \to \overline{N}$ with $\partial_{\overline{N}}(\gamma) = \phi_{\overline{N}}$.*

Proof. As usual, we write $\ell : H \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ for the quadratic form associated with ∂. Since every monoid has a sharp homomorphism to a valuative monoid, we can assume that $\overline{N}$ is valuative.

Since $\mathbf{Cone}^{\circ}(\overline{M})$ is quasicompact, it is sufficient to show that every $V \in \mathbf{Cone}^{\circ}(\overline{M})$ has an open neighborhood U such that there are only finitely elements in H that represent ϕ_W for any valuation $\overline{M} \to W$ lying in U. We fix one $V \in \mathbf{Cone}^{\circ}(\overline{M})$. Beginning with $U = \mathbf{Cone}^{\circ}(\overline{M})$, we will replace U by a smaller open neighborhood of V finitely many times until we arrive at a neighborhood where we can be sure ϕ has only finitely many representatives.

Since the underlying abelian group of V is finitely generated, V has a finite filtration by totally ordered subgroups V_p such that V_p/V_{p-1} are all archimedean; we choose embeddings $V_p/V_{p-1} \subset \mathbf{R}$. These, together with ∂, induce a filtration of H and positive definite pairings ∂_p on H_p/H_{p-1}, valued in V_p/V_{p-1}.

The proof will be by induction on the index p of the subgroup V_p in which ∂_V and ϕ_V take their values. Assume that ϕ_V and ∂_V both take values in $V_p \subset V$. Since ϕ_V is bounded by ∂, it descends to a map $\phi_p : H/H_{p-1} \to V_p/V_{p-1} \subset \mathbf{R}$.

LEMMA 3.11.2. *There is an open neighborhood of V over which the representatives of ϕ in H lie in at most finitely many distinct cosets of H_{p-1}.*

Proof. Choose a subdivision of $\mathbf{R}H_p/\mathbf{R}H_{p-1}$ into a finite number of rational polyhedral cones σ such that $\partial_p(\bar{\beta}) \cdot \bar{\gamma} > 0$ whenever $\bar{\beta}$ and $\bar{\gamma}$ are elements of H_p/H_{p-1} lying in the same cone σ.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

This means that if β and γ are lifts of $\bar{\beta}$ and $\bar{\gamma}$ to H_p then $\partial_V(\beta)\cdot\gamma \succ V_{p-1}$. In particular, $\partial_V(\beta)\cdot\gamma > 0$ for all $\beta,\gamma \in H_p - H_{p-1}$ and, for each $\gamma \in H_p - H_{p-1}$, there is a positive n (depending on γ) such that $n\ell_V(\gamma) > \phi_V(\gamma)$.

Choose a finite set of generators B_σ in H_p for each σ. There is an open neighborhood $U_\sigma \subset U$ of V such that $\partial_{U_\sigma}(\beta)\cdot\gamma > 0$ and $n\ell_{U_\sigma}(\gamma) > \phi_{U_\sigma}(\gamma)$ for all $\beta,\gamma \in B_\sigma$. Since there are only finitely many cones σ and finitely many generators in each B_σ, the positive integer n can be chosen independent of σ, β, and γ. Replacing U by the intersection of the (finitely many) U_σ, we can assume that these inequalities hold on U.

Now suppose $\gamma \in H$ is a putative representative of γ. The reduction of γ modulo H_{p-1} lies in some cone σ. We can therefore write $\gamma \equiv \sum_{\beta\in B_\sigma} a_\beta \beta \pmod{H_{p-1}}$ with all $a_\beta \geq 0$. Evaluating on $\beta \in B_\sigma$, we have the following inequality over U:

$$\partial_U(\gamma)\cdot\beta = \sum_{\beta'\in B_\sigma} a_{\beta'}\partial_U(\beta)\cdot\beta' > a_\beta \ell_U(\beta).$$

Since the a_β are all positive integers, and $n\ell_U(\beta) > \phi_U(\beta)$, we will have $\partial_U(\gamma)\cdot\beta > \phi_U(\beta)$ if $a_\beta > n$. In particular, we deduce that, for each σ, there are at most finitely many possibilities for the a_β if $\partial(\gamma)$ is to have a chance of representing ϕ anywhere in U. Since there are only finitely many cones σ, we conclude. □

Suppose γ represents one of the cosets invoked in the lemma. Then the representatives of ϕ in $\gamma + H_{p-1}$ correspond bijectively to the representatives of $\phi - \partial(\gamma)$ in H_{p-1}. Replacing ϕ successively by $\phi - \partial(\gamma)$ for representatives γ of each of the finitely many cosets guaranteed by the lemma, it therefore suffices to show that ϕ has at most finitely many representatives in H_{p-1} in a neighborhood of V.

We can now replace H with H_{p-1} and ϕ and ∂ with their restrictions to H_{p-1}. If there are finitely many potential representatives of $\phi|_{H_{p-1}}$ in H_{p-1} in a neighborhood of V, then of course there will be finitely many potential representatives of ϕ in H_{p-1} as well. With this reduction, both ϕ_V and ∂_V take values in V_{p-1} and we can induct. □

Corollary 3.11.3. *Let H be a finitely generated abelian group, let $\overline{M}$ be a sharp monoid, and let $\partial : H \to \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ be a positive definite pairing. Then $H \to \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ is of finite type and affine.*

Proof. The assertion is, in other words, that for any logarithmic scheme of finite type and any morphism $\phi : S \to \mathrm{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$, the fiber product $H \times_{\mathrm{Hom}(H,\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})} S$ is quasicompact. This assertion is local in the constructible and étale topologies on S, so we can assume S is connected and has a constant logarithmic structure, the stalk of whose characteristic monoid is $\overline{M}$. We therefore regard ϕ as a homomorphism $H \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

By Theorem 3.11.1, there are only finitely many $\gamma \in H$ such that there is a nonempty subfunctor of that represented by S in which $\partial(\gamma)$ represents ϕ. These are mutually disjoint, and treating these one at a time, it is sufficient to show that the subfunctor of S in which a fixed $\partial(\gamma)$ represents ϕ is of finite type and affine.

This functor is described by the finitely many equations $\partial(\gamma)\cdot e_i = \phi(e_i)$, for e_i lying in a basis of H. By Proposition 2.2.7.5, this locus is representable by an affine scheme of finite type. □

Corollary 3.11.4. *Let $\mathscr{X}$ be a tropical curve metrized by $\overline{M}$. Then the intersection pairing*

$$\partial : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) \tag{3.11.4.1}$$

is bounded.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. The intersection pairing is positive definite. □

4. The logarithmic Picard group

Suppose that X is a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S where the underlying scheme of S is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field, and let $\mathscr{X}$ be the tropicalization of X. Then $H^1(X, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) = H^1(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) = H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL})$ because $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a sheaf of torsion-free abelian groups. If $\overline{Q}$ is an $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on X then we say that $\overline{Q}$ has *bounded monodromy* if the corresponding PL-torsor on $\mathscr{X}$ does. If Q is an $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor on X then we say that Q has bounded monodromy if its induced $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor has bounded monodromy.

DEFINITION 4.1. Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. A *logarithmic line bundle* on X is a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor on X in the strict étale topology whose fibers over S have bounded monodromy. Let $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ be the category fibered in groupoids on logarithmic schemes over S whose T-points are the logarithmic line bundles on X_T. We write $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ for its associated sheaf of isomorphism classes.

4.2 Local finite presentation

DEFINITION 4.2.1. A category fibered in groupoids F on the category of logarithmic schemes over S is said to be *locally of finite presentation* if, for any cofiltered system of affine logarithmic S-schemes S_i, the map

$$\varinjlim F(S_i) \to F(\varprojlim S_i)$$

is an equivalence of categories.

The definition of local finite presentation should be compared with Lemma 2.2.3.4. Local finite presentation is important because it allows us to limit our attention to logarithmic schemes of finite type.

PROPOSITION 4.2.2. *Suppose X is a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Then* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *is locally of finite presentation over S.*

Proof. We prove the essential surjectivity part of Definition 4.2.1 for the functor $\pi_*\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$. The full faithfulness is similar but easier, and we omit it. Then we prove that the bounded monodromy condition defining $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ inside $\pi_*\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is locally of finite presentation.

The assertion is local in S, so we assume S is quasicompact and quasiseparated. Consider a cofiltered inverse system of affine logarithmic schemes S_i over S. Let X_i be the base change of X to S_i. Let L be a logarithmic line bundle over $Y = \varprojlim X_i$. Then there is an étale cover U_j of Y over which L can be trivialized. We can assume that the U_j are all quasicompact and quasiseparated. We note that Y is quasicompact and quasiseparated because all the X_i were. In particular, we can arrange for the U_j to be finite in number. By [EGA, Théorème IV.8.8.2], they are induced by maps $U_{ij} \to X_i$ for some index i. These maps can be assumed étale by [EGA, Proposition IV.17.7.8] and surjective by [EGA, Théorème IV.8.10.5].

The transition functions defining L come from $\Gamma(U_{jk}, M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \varinjlim_i \Gamma(U_{ijk}, M_{X_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$, so are induced from transition functions over U_{ijk} for some sufficiently large i. Likewise, the cocycle condition is checked in $\Gamma(U_{jk\ell}, M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \varinjlim_i \Gamma(U_{ijk\ell}, M_{X_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ and is therefore valid for a sufficiently large i. Then L is induced from X_i.

It remains to verify that the bounded monodromy condition is locally of finite presentation. That is, we assume that we have a cofiltered inverse system of affine logarithmic schemes S_i

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

over S, as before, and that $\alpha_i \in H^1(X_i, \overline{M}_{X_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. We assume that their limit $\beta \in H^1(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})$ has bounded monodromy and we prove the same for a sufficiently large α_i.

There is a finite stratification of S into locally closed subschemes such that $\overline{M}_S$ is locally constant on each stratum. Since the bounded monodromy condition is checked on geometric points, we can replace S with one of its strata and assume $\overline{M}_S$ is constant. Now replacing S by an étale cover, we can assume $\overline{M}_S$ is constant and that the dual graph $\mathscr{X}$ of X is constant as well.

Using the exact sequence

$$R^1\pi_*\pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\overline{M}_X \to R^1\pi_*\overline{M}_{X/S} = 0 \tag{4.2.2.1}$$

we can lift α to $\tilde{\alpha} \in H^1(X, \pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$. The bounded monodromy condition for $\tilde{\alpha}$ can be checked by evaluating it on each of the finitely many generators of $H_1(\mathscr{X})$, and for any one γ in $H_1(\mathscr{X})$, we can see that $\tilde{\alpha}(\gamma)$ is bounded by $\ell(\gamma)$ in $\varinjlim \Gamma(S_i, \overline{M}_{S_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ if and only if it is bounded in $\Gamma(S_i, \overline{M}_{S_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ at some finite stage. This completes the proof. □

Corollary 4.2.3. *Suppose X is a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Then the sheaf $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is locally of finite presentation over S.*

Proof. We can assume without loss of generality that X has connected fibers over S. Then $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is a gerbe over $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ banded by $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$. Locally in S, this gerbe admits a section, making $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ into a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor over $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$. But $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is certainly locally of finite presentation and $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is locally of finite presentation over S by Proposition 4.2.2, so $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is locally of finite presentation over S, as required. □

4.3 Line bundles on subdivisions

The following statement is a corollary of Proposition 3.5.1. It says, effectively, that logarithmic line bundles can be represented by line bundles locally in the logarithmic étale topology.

Corollary 4.3.1. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over a logarithmic scheme S. A class $\alpha \in H^1(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ has bounded monodromy in the geometric fibers if and only if, étale-locally in S, we can find a logarithmic modification $\tilde{S} \to S$ and a model $\tilde{X}$ of X over $\tilde{S}$ such that $\alpha|_{\tilde{X}} = 0$.*

Proof. Replacing S by an étale cover, we can assume S is affine. We can then assume S is of finite type because the moduli space of logarithmic curves is locally of finite presentation and $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is locally of finite presentation (Proposition 4.2.2). Passing to a finer étale cover if necessary, we can arrange for S to be atomic (Proposition 2.2.2.5) and for the dual graph of X to be constant over the closed stratum. In particular, S is quasicompact.

Let S^{val} be the limit over all logarithmic modifications of S. This is a locally ringed space and its logarithmic structure is valuative. By Proposition 3.5.1, for each point s of S^{val}, we can find a subdivision $\mathscr{Y}_s$ of $\mathscr{X}_s$ to which the restriction of α is zero. If Y_s denotes the corresponding logarithmic modification of X_s then α restricts to 0 on Y_s.

The subdivision $\mathscr{Y}_s$ only requires a finite number of elements of $\overline{M}_{S^{\mathrm{val}},s}$ that are not already in $\overline{M}_{S,s}$, so it is possible to recover $\mathscr{Y}_s$ and Y_s as pulled back from a logarithmic modification Y_1 of X over a logarithmic modification S_1 of S. Moreover, there is an open neighborhood U_1 of s in S_1 where $\alpha|_{Y_1 \times_{S_1} U_1} = 0$.

Since S^{val} is quasicompact, the preimages of finitely many of these open neighborhoods U_i suffice to cover S^{val}. Let T be the fiber product of the finitely many logarithmic modifications S_i of S. Let $\mathscr{Z}$ and Z be the common subdivision of the $\mathscr{Y}_i|_T$ and the corresponding logarithmic modification of X over T, respectively. Then the U_i pull back to an open cover of T, from which it follows that $\alpha|_Z = 0$. □

PROPOSITION 4.3.2. *Let X be a logarithmic curve over S. The following conditions are equivalent for a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor P on X.*

(1) *P has bounded monodromy.*
(2) *In each valuative geometric fiber of S, there is a model Y of X where P is induced from a $\mathcal{O}_Y^*$-torsor.*
(3) *Étale-locally in S there exist a logarithmic modification $\tilde{S} \to S$ and a model $\tilde{X}$ of X over $\tilde{S}$ such that the restriction of P to $\tilde{X}$ is representable by a $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor.*

Proof. From the exact sequence

$$H^1(X, \mathcal{O}_X^*) \to H^1(X, M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) \qquad (4.3.2.1)$$

finding a $Y \to X$ where P is representable by a $\mathcal{O}_Y^*$-torsor is equivalent to finding a cover where the class of P in $H^1(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is trivial. With this observation, the equivalence of the first two conditions is Proposition 3.5.1 and the equivalence of the first and last conditions is Corollary 4.3.1. □

4.4 Logarithmic étale descent

By definition, $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is a stack in the étale topology. We show here that, in certain situations, it is in fact a stack in the *logarithmic* étale topology. As the logarithmic étale topology is generated by étale covers, logarithmic modifications, and root stack constructions [Nak17, Proposition 3.9] (prime to the characteristic), we still need to check descent along logarithmic modifications and root stacks. Descent along logarithmic modifications (not necessarily prime to the characteristic) was proved by K. Kato [Kat21], as we summarize below, so the main topic of this subsection will be descent along logarithmic modifications.

THEOREM 4.4.1. *The fibered category of étale $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsors is a stack in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology on logarithmic schemes. It is a stack in the full logarithmic étale topology on logarithmic schemes whose structure sheaves are sheaves in the logarithmic étale topology.*

Remark 4.4.2. We note that under either logarithmic modifications or root stacks, the cohomology groups of $H^i(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ of the characteristic monoid and the Picard group of X change. Theorem 4.4.1 asserts that nevertheless, for a sufficiently well-behaved X, these groups change in the same way, and thus the cohomology groups $H^i(X, M_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ of the logarithmic structure itself remain constant.

Remark 4.4.3. It is not true in general, as was claimed in an earlier draft of this paper, that $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is a stack in the large full logarithmic étale topology on S, nor that it is a stack on the small logarithmic étale topology for all bases S. Nakayama has given an example of a logarithmic étale cover of a logarithmic scheme S with respect to which $\mathbf{G}_m$ does not form a separated presheaf [Nak17, remark following Proposition 2.6]. Since one can certainly find logarithmic curves X over S whose logarithmic Jacobians contain $\mathbf{G}_m$ as a subgroup, it follows that $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ cannot be a sheaf in the (small) full logarithmic étale topology on this S. Since $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is, étale-locally in S, a product of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ with $\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$, it follows as well that $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is not a stack in the (small) full logarithmic étale topology on this S.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

We will give the full proof of Theorem 4.4.1 elsewhere. Here, we will only demonstrate the few cases that we need right now. We require the following definition to formulate the hypotheses of those cases.

Definition 4.4.4. Let $\overline{M}$ be a finitely generated, saturated, sharp monoid. An element $\alpha \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ will be called *saturated* (with respect to $\overline{M}$) if α generates the associated group of every rank-1 localization of $\overline{M}$ in which it is nonzero. If X is a logarithmic scheme, then a section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is saturated if its image in $\overline{M}_{X,x}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is saturated with respect to $\overline{M}_{X,x}$ for every geometric point x of X.

In other words, α is saturated if $\overline{N}/\mathbf{Z}\alpha$ is torsion-free for every rank-1 localization $\overline{N}$ of $\overline{M}$.

Here are the versions of Theorem 4.4.1 that we will prove here.

Proposition 4.4.5. *Let X be a logarithmic scheme. Every M_X^{gp}-torsor in the strict fppf topology descends uniquely to an étale M_X^{gp}-torsor. In particular, M_X^{gp} is an fppf sheaf.*

Proposition 4.4.6. *Let X be a logarithmic scheme and let $\tau : Y \to X$ be a root stack. Then every étale M_Y^{gp}-torsor descends uniquely to an M_X^{gp}-torsor. In particular, $\tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$.*

Proposition 4.4.7. *Let X be a logarithmic scheme and let $\tau : Y \to X$ be a logarithmic modification. Assume τ is, étale-locally in X, the subdivision associated with a saturated section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Then every étale M_Y^{gp}-torsor on Y is étale-locally trivial on X.*

Proposition 4.4.7 will suffice for the applications in this paper. It is also the main technical piece of the full proof of Theorem 4.4.1. The following proposition is not used in this paper, but will be needed for some applications and can be proved more quickly from Proposition 4.4.7 than Theorem 4.4.1 can.

Proposition 4.4.8. *Let X be a logarithmic scheme and let $\tau : Y \to X$ be a logarithmic modification. Assume that X is logarithmically flat over a valuative logarithmic scheme. Then every étale M_Y^{gp}-torsor on Y descends to an M_X^{gp}-torsor on X. In particular, $\tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$.*

4.4.9 *Proof of Proposition 4.4.5.* An M_X^{gp}-torsor is a $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor over an $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor. We can view $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsors on the strict fppf site as algebraic spaces via the espace étalé, so these satisfy strict fppf descent, and $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsors satisfy fppf descent by Hilbert's Theorem 90.

4.4.10 *Proof of Proposition 4.4.6.* This is really a theorem of K. Kato. We merely summarize how to deduce it from various statements in [Kat21].

It is shown in [Kat21, Theorem 3.2] that $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is a sheaf in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology and in [Kat21, Corollary 5.2] that $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsors in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology are étale-locally trivial. Thus, any descent datum for a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology descends to a descent datum in the strict étale topology, in which it is effective by definition. Therefore, $\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is a stack in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology.

4.4.11 *Observations about saturated sections of the characteristic monoid.* The idea of Definition 4.4.4 is that if X is a logarithmic scheme and $\alpha \in \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ then α determines a morphism $X \to \mathbf{G}_m^{\mathrm{trop}}$, and we should think of this as a saturated morphism if α satisfies the condition of the definition.

Lemma 4.4.11.1. *Let $\overline{M}$ be a fine and saturated monoid. Suppose $\alpha \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is saturated. Then $\overline{M} + \mathbf{N}\alpha \subset \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is saturated.*

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. Let σ be the rational polyhedral cone dual to $\overline{M}$. Let $\tau \subset \sigma$ be the subcone where $\alpha \geq 0$. Let $\overline{N} \subset \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ be the set of $\gamma \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ such that $\gamma(\tau) \geq 0$. Then $\overline{N}$ is the saturation of $\overline{M} + \mathbf{N}\alpha$. We wish to show that $\overline{N} = \overline{M} + \mathbf{N}\alpha$.

Suppose that $\gamma \in \overline{N}$. We can write γ as $c\alpha + \beta$ where $\beta \in \mathbf{Q}_{\geq 0}\overline{M}$ and $c \in \mathbf{Q}_{\geq 0}$. We argue that c must be an integer and β must be in $\overline{M}$. If $c \geq 1$ then $(c-1)\alpha + \beta$ is also ≥ 0 on ξ and is in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We therefore assume that $0 \leq c < 1$ and will show that $\gamma \in \overline{M}$.

Suppose that ξ is any ray of σ. Since $\beta \in \overline{M}$, the slope of β on ξ must be ≥ 0. The slope of α on ξ is ≥ -1 because α is saturated, and $c < 1$, so the slope of γ on ξ must be > -1. On the other hand, γ must have integral slope on ξ, so this slope must be ≥ 0. This holds for all rays ξ of σ, so we deduce that $\gamma(\sigma) \geq 0$. That is, $\gamma \in \overline{M}$. □

Corollary 4.4.11.2. *Suppose that X is a logarithmic scheme whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of a field. Let α be a section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Assume that neither α nor $-\alpha$ lies in $\overline{M}_X$. Then there is a universal scheme with a fine logarithmic structure, Y, over X such that the restriction of α to Y lies in $\overline{M}_Y$ and the underlying scheme of Y is isomorphic to $\mathbf{A}^1_X$. If α is saturated then Y is saturated.*

Proof. Let Y have underlying scheme $\operatorname{Spec} \operatorname{Sym} \mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$. Write $\tau : Y \to X$ for the projection. Let M_Y be the submonoid of $\tau^*(M_X)^{\mathrm{gp}}$ (the associated group of the pullback logarithmic structure) generated by $\tau^* M_X$ and $\mathcal{O}_Y^*(-\alpha) \subset \tau^*(M_X)^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We have a homomorphism $\varepsilon_Y : M_Y \to \mathcal{O}_Y$ by the following formula, for all local choices of $a \in \mathcal{O}_Y^*(-\alpha)$ and all $b \in \tau^* M_X$:

$$\varepsilon_Y(a^n b) = a^n \varepsilon_X(b).$$

Note that if $a^n b \in M_Y$ has a second local representation as $c^m d$ for $c \in \mathcal{O}_Y^*(-\alpha)$ and $d \in \tau^* M_X$ then b and d are either both units of $\tau^* M_X$ or are both nonunits.[3] If b and d are both units then $a^n b = c^m d$ lies in $\bigcup_{n \geq 0} \mathcal{O}_Y^*(-n\alpha)$, and ε_Y restricts to the canonical injection of this submonoid into $\operatorname{Sym} \mathcal{O}_X(-\alpha)$, so it is certainly well defined; if b and d are both nonunits then $\varepsilon_X(b) = \varepsilon_X(d) = 0$, since X is the spectrum of a field, hence $\varepsilon_Y(a^n b) = \varepsilon_Y(c^n d)$.

Thus, ε_Y is well defined and makes M_Y into a logarithmic structure on Y. This logarithmic structure is fine, since étale-locally X has a global chart by $\Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X)$ and then Y has a global chart by $\overline{M}_X + \mathbf{N}\alpha$. The characteristic monoid of Y is $\overline{M}_X + \mathbf{N}\alpha$ at the closed point where $\mathcal{O}_Y(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_Y$ vanishes, and it is $\overline{M}_X + \mathbf{Z}\alpha / \mathbf{Z}\alpha$ elsewhere. In particular, it is integral and therefore fine. By Lemma 4.4.11.1, it is also saturated if α is saturated.

To conclude, we verify that Y has the required universal property. If $f : Z \to X$ is any morphism such that $f^*\alpha$ lies in $\overline{M}_Z$ then we obtain a morphism $\mathcal{O}_Z(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_Z$. This extends to a ring homomorphism $\operatorname{Sym} \mathcal{O}_Z(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_Z$ and therefore induces a morphism of schemes $g : Z \to Y$. Since M_Y is the submonoid of $\tau^* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ generated by $\mathcal{O}_Y^*(-\alpha)$ and $\tau^* M_X$, the map $g^* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} \to M_Z^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induced from f carries $g^* M_Y$ into M_Z. Finally, g was chosen so that $g^* \mathcal{O}_Y(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_Z$ coincides with $\mathcal{O}_Z(-\alpha) \to \mathcal{O}_Z$ so g is actually a morphism of logarithmic schemes. □

Corollary 4.4.11.3. *Suppose X is a logarithmic scheme whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of a field. Suppose α is a saturated section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Let Y be the universal logarithmic scheme over X where α is locally comparable to 0 in the partial order on $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induced from $\overline{M}_X$. Then the underlying scheme of Y is isomorphic to $\mathbf{P}^1_X$.*

[3] Indeed, write β and δ for the images of b and d in $\overline{M}_X$. Then $a^n b = c^m d$ entails $n\alpha + \beta = m\alpha + \delta$. But $\mathbf{Z}\alpha \cap \overline{M}_X = 0$ since $\overline{M}_X$ is saturated and neither α nor $-\alpha$ is in $\overline{M}_X$. Thus, if one of β or δ is zero (say, δ) then $(m-n)\alpha = \beta$, so $n = m$ and $\beta = 0$ as well. So either β and δ are both zero, or are both nonzero. If β and δ are both zero then b and d are units, and if they are both nonzero then $\varepsilon_X(b) = \varepsilon_X(d) = 0$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. The charts where $\alpha \geq 0$ and where $\alpha \leq 0$ are each isomorphic to $\mathbf{A}^1_X$ by Corollary 4.4.11.2. These are glued along the locus where $\alpha = 0$, which is isomorphic to Spec $\sum_{n \in \mathbf{Z}} \mathcal{O}_X(n\alpha)$. □

Corollary 4.4.11.4. *Suppose X is a logarithmic scheme and $\alpha \in \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Let Y be the universal scheme with a fine logarithmic structure where α is locally comparable to 0 in the partial order of $\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induced from $\overline{M}_Y$. Then Y is saturated and the underlying scheme of the fiber of Y over a each point x of X is either empty, isomorphic to x, or isomorphic to $\mathbf{P}^1_x$.*

Proof. It is immediate from Lemma 4.4.11.1 that Y is saturated.

Since the construction of Y relative to X is compatible with strict base change, it is sufficient to prove the corollary after base change to a point. We therefore assume that X is the spectrum of a field. There are now three possibilities: if $\alpha \in \overline{M}_X$ then $Y = X$ and we are done; if $-\alpha \in \overline{M}_X$ then $Y = \varnothing$ and we are done; if neither α nor $-\alpha$ is in $\overline{M}_X$ then $Y \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_X$ by Corollary 4.4.11.3. □

Lemma 4.4.11.5. *Suppose that X is a quasicompact logarithmic scheme and $\alpha \in \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Then there exist a root stack X' of X and an integer $n > 0$ such that $n^{-1}\alpha$ is saturated on X'.*

Proof. Since X is quasicompact, there is a finite collection of rank-1 localizations of the characteristic monoids $\overline{M}_{X,x}$ at geometric points x of X. Each of these localizations is (uniquely) isomorphic to $\mathbf{N}$. Let n_x be the image of α in $\overline{M}_{X,x} \simeq \mathbf{N}$. Let n be the least common multiple of the nonzero n_x and let X' be the extension of $\overline{M}_X$ in $\mathbf{Q}\overline{M}_X$ generated by $\overline{M}_X$ and $n^{-1}\alpha$. Then $n^{-1}\alpha$ generates $\overline{M}_{X,x}$ at every geometric point x of X where α is nonzero. □

4.4.12 *Proof of Proposition 4.4.7.* The hypotheses are preserved by étale localization in X, and the conclusion satisfies étale descent in X. We can therefore assume that X is quasicompact and quasiseparated and has a global chart by a sharp monoid P, and that there is a saturated $\alpha \in P$ of such that Y is the universal logarithmic modification of X where the image of α in $\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is locally comparable to 0.

In this situation, we prove two slightly more precise statements that imply Proposition 4.4.7.

Lemma 4.4.12.1. *We have $\mathrm{R}^1\tau_*\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = 0$.*

Proof. By proper base change for étale cohomology, which implies that the base-change map is injective for H^1 [SGA4(3), Théorème 5.1(ii)], it is sufficient to prove that

$$H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}) = 0$$

for all geometric points x of X. By Corollary 4.4.11.4, the underlying scheme of the fiber $Z = \tau^{-1}x$ is either empty, isomorphic to x, or isomorphic to $\mathbf{P}^1_x$. In the first two cases, the conclusion is trivial. If $Z \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_x$, we have an exact sequence

$$0 \to \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_x^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_Z^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_{Z/x}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0$$

We have $H^1(Z, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_x^{\mathrm{gp}}) = 0$ since $\pi^{-1}\overline{M}_x^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is constant and Z is simply connected. We have $H^1(Z, \overline{M}_{Z/x}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = 0$ since $\overline{M}_{Z/x}$ is concentrated in dimension 0. Combined with proper base change, this gives $\mathrm{R}^1\tau_*\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = 0$. □

Lemma 4.4.12.2. *The map $\tau_*(\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})/\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{R}^1\tau_*\mathcal{O}_Y^*$ is an isomorphism.*

Proof. We make some preliminary reductions. It is sufficient to show that the map of étale stalks $\tau_*(\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})/\overline{M}_{X,x}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{R}^1\tau_*(\mathcal{O}_Y^*)_x$ is an isomorphism for every geometric point x of X. Since τ is of finite presentation, the formation of $\mathrm{R}^1\tau_*\mathcal{O}_Y^*$ commutes with localization, as does the formation

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

of $\tau_*(\overline{M}_Y^{\rm gp})/\overline{M}_X^{\rm gp}$. It therefore suffices to assume that X is the spectrum of a henselian local ring. We write x for the closed point of X.

Under these assumptions, we need to show that

$$H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\rm gp})/H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\rm gp}) \to H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) \qquad (*)$$

is an isomorphism.

Since X has no nontrivial étale covers, we can find γ and δ in $\overline{M}_X$ such that $\gamma - \delta = \alpha$. These lift to sections $\tilde{\gamma}$ and $\tilde{\delta}$ of M_X. Then α factors through $\varphi = (\tilde{\gamma}, \tilde{\delta}) : X \to \mathbf{A}^2$ (where $\mathbf{A}^2$ has the toric logarithmic structure), and Y is the pullback of the blowup of $\mathbf{A}^2$ at the origin. We write $X' = \mathbf{A}^2$ and Y' for the blowup of X' at the origin.

We will now prove the proposition by considering successively more general examples of X.

STEP I: *X is the spectrum of a field.* Then Y is either empty, isomorphic to X, or isomorphic to $\mathbf{P}^1_X$. The conclusion is trivial in the first two cases, so assume $Y \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_X$. Then $H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\rm gp}) = H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\rm gp}) + \mathbf{Z}\beta$ where β is the section $\max\{0, \alpha\}$. Direct calculation shows that $\mathcal{O}_Y(\beta) \simeq \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^1_X}(1)$ under the isomorphism $Y \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_X$. Since $\operatorname{Pic}(\mathbf{P}^1_X)$ is generated by $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{P}^1_X}(1)$, this shows that $(*)$ is an isomorphism.

STEP II: *X is an artinian local ring and $\varphi : X \to X'$ factors* schematically *through the origin.* Let x be the closed point of X. We will show that $H^0(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) = H^0(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}^*_{\tau^{-1}x})$. Since the same identity holds for $H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\rm gp})/H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\rm gp})$ (since $\overline{M}_Y^{\rm gp}$ and $\overline{M}_X^{\rm gp}$ are étale sheaves and the inclusions $x \to X$ and $\tau^{-1}x \to Y$ induce equivalence of étale sites), this will be enough to complete this case.

Every artinian local ring is an iterated extension of the residue field $k = k(x)$ by square-zero ideals isomorphic to k. By induction, we may therefore assume that X is such an extension of some X_0, and that the conclusion of the proposition is already known for the restriction Y_0 of Y to X_0. The inductive step is to show that the restriction map $H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) \to H^1(Y_0, \mathcal{O}_{Y_0}^*)$ is an isomorphism.

Let J be the ideal of Y_0 in Y. This is also the kernel of $\mathcal{O}_Y^* \to \mathcal{O}_{Y_0}^*$. We have an exact sequence

$$H^1(\tau^{-1}x, J) \to H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) \to H^1(Y_0, \mathcal{O}_{Y_0}^*) \to H^2(\tau^{-1}x, J)$$

Since J is supported on $\tau^{-1}x \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_{\tau^{-1}x}$, we have $H^2(\tau^{-1}x, J) = 0$ for dimension reasons. We show next that $H^1(\tau^{-1}x, J)$ also vanishes.

Let Z be the fiber product $X \times_{X'} Y'$ as a scheme with a logarithmic structure that is not necessarily integral. Since $\varphi(X) = 0$, we have $Z \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_X$. Then Y is the universal scheme over Z over which the pullback of M_Z is integral (it is automatically saturated by Corollary 4.4.11.4). Since $Z \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_X$ is flat over X, the ideal of Z_0 in Z is $\mathcal{O}_{\tau^{-1}x}$. Therefore, J, which is the ideal of $Y_0 = Y \cap Z_0$ in Y, is a quotient of $\mathcal{O}_{\tau^{-1}x}$. Let K be the kernel of $\mathcal{O}_{\tau^{-1}x} \to J$. Then we have an exact sequence

$$H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}_{\tau^{-1}x}) \to H^1(\tau^{-1}x, J) \to H^2(\tau^{-1}x, K)$$

Since $\tau^{-1}x \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_x$, both $H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}_{\tau^{-1}x})$ and $H^2(\tau^{-1}x, K)$ vanish. This completes the proof that $H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) = H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}^*_{\tau^{-1}x})$, and implies that $(*)$ is an isomorphism in this case.

STEP III: *X is the spectrum of an artinian local ring.* For each n, let X'_n be the nth infinitesimal neighborhood of the origin in X' and let Y'_n be its preimage in Y'. Let $X_n = \varphi^{-1}X'_n$ be the preimage in X of X'_n, and let Y_n be the preimage in Y. Let Z_n be the pullback of Y' to X_n as a scheme with a logarithmic structure that is not necessarily integral. The ideal of Y'_{n-1} in Y'_n is $\mathcal{O}_{Y'_0}(n)$. Therefore, the ideal of Z_{n-1} in Z_n is a quotient of $\mathcal{O}_{Z_0}(n)$. Since $Y_{n-1} = Z_{n-1} \cap Y_n$ the

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

ideal of Y_{n-1} in Y_n is thus also a quotient of $\mathcal{O}_{Z_0}(n)$; we denote this quotient by J and write K for the kernel. We have an exact sequence

$$H^1(Z_0, \mathcal{O}_{Z_0}(n)) \to H^1(Y_0, J) \to H^2(Z_0, K)$$

Since Z_0 is one-dimensional, $H^2(Z_0, K)$ vanishes. But $H^1(Z_0, \mathcal{O}_{Z_0}(n))$ also vanishes, because $Z_0 \simeq \mathbf{P}^1_{X_0}$ and $n \geq 0$ (in fact $n \geq 1$). Since we also have $H^2(Y_0, J) = 0$ by dimension considerations, we deduce that $H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) = H^1(Y_0, \mathcal{O}_{Y_0}^*) = H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}^*_{\tau^{-1}x})$, as before. Thus (*) is an isomorphism in this case, by the same argument as in the last step.

Step IV: *X is the spectrum of a complete noetherian local ring.* Suppose $X = \operatorname{Spec} A$ and I is the maximal ideal of A. Write X_n for the vanishing locus of I^{n+1} and $Y_n = \tau^{-1} X_n$. By Grothendieck's existence theorem, $H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) = \varprojlim H^1(Y_n, \mathcal{O}_{Y_n}^*)$. By proper base change $H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) = H^0(Y_0, \overline{M}_{Y_0}^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X_0, \overline{M}_{X_0}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Therefore, we conclude by the previous case.

Step V: *X is the henselization of scheme of finite type at a geometric point.* As before, let X_n denote the nth-order infinitesimal neighborhood of x in X and let Y_n be its preimage in Y. We have a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ H^0(\tau^{-1}x, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{\tau^{-1}x})/\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X,x} & \longrightarrow & H^1(\tau^{-1}x, \mathcal{O}^*_{\tau^{-1}x}) \end{array}$$

The left vertical arrow is an isomorphism by proper base change, and the bottom horizontal arrow is an isomorphism by the special case of the lemma for a point. Therefore, the upper horizontal arrow is injective.

We prove it is also surjective. Suppose that L is an invertible sheaf on Y. Let $\hat{X}$ be the completion of X and let $\hat{Y}$ be the base change of Y to $\hat{X}$. Let $\hat{L}$ be the restriction of L to $\hat{Y}$. Then by the previous case, there is some $\lambda \in H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})$ such that $\hat{L} \simeq \mathcal{O}_{\hat{Y}}(\lambda)$. Since the problem of specifying an isomorphism $L \simeq \mathcal{O}_Y(\lambda)$ is locally of finite presentation, as a functor of X, Artin's approximation theorem implies that there is an isomorphism $L \simeq \mathcal{O}_Y(\lambda)$.

Step VI: *X is the spectrum of a henselian local ring.* We can present X as a cofiltered inverse limit of spectra X_i of henselian local rings of finite type with closed points x_i. Then $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X,x} = \varinjlim \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_i,x_i}$ so we can assume that the element $\alpha \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X,x}$ used to construct Y is induced from elements $\alpha_i \in \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X_i,x_i}$. For each i, let Y_i be the universal logarithmic scheme over X_i where α_i is locally comparable to 0 in $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{Y_i}$. Then $H^1(Y, \mathcal{O}_Y^*) = \varinjlim H^1(Y_i, \mathcal{O}_{Y_i}^*)$ and $H^0(Y, \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \varinjlim H^0(Y_i, \overline{M}_{Y_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X_i, \overline{M}_{X_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})$. The previous case shows that $H^0(Y_i, \overline{M}_{Y_i}^{\mathrm{gp}})/H^0(X_i, \overline{M}_{X_i}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(Y_i, \mathcal{O}_{Y_i}^*)$ is an isomorphism for every i, so we conclude by passage to the limit. □

4.4.13 *The logarithmically flat case.*

Proposition 4.4.13.1. *Suppose that X and Y are logarithmic schemes over S and $\tau : Y \to X$ is a logarithmic modification. Assume that both X and Y are integral over S and X is logarithmically flat over S. Then the map $\mathcal{O}_X \to \mathrm{R}\tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y$ is a quasi-isomorphism.*

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Proof. The assertion is étale-local in S and in X, so we may assume that there is a cartesian diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} Y & \longrightarrow & Y' \times_{S'} S & \longrightarrow & Y' \\ {\scriptstyle\tau}\downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow{\scriptstyle\rho} \\ X & \longrightarrow & X' \times_{S'} S & \longrightarrow & X' \\ & \searrow & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ & & S & \longrightarrow & S' \end{array} \tag{2}$$

in which X', Y', and S' are toric varieties and the maps between them are toric, and all horizontal arrows are strict. Since X and Y are integral over S, the toric varieties X' and Y' are flat over S'. Since X is logarithmically flat over S, the map $X \to X' \times_{S'} S$ is also flat.

As $Y' \to X'$ is a toric modification, we have $\mathrm{R}\rho_* \mathcal{O}_{Y'} = \mathcal{O}_{X'}$ [Ful93, § 3.5, p. 76, Proposition]. Since X' and Y' are flat over S', this equality remains true after base change to S.[4] Thus, $\mathcal{O}_{X' \times_{S'} S} \to \mathrm{R}\rho_* \mathcal{O}_{Y' \times_{S'} S}$ is also a quasi-isomorphism. Then by flat base change along $X \to X' \times_{S'} S$, we obtain the quasi-isomorphism $\mathcal{O}_X \to \mathrm{R}\tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y$ that we require. □

LEMMA 4.4.13.2. *Suppose X and Y are logarithmic schemes over S. Assume that X and Y are both integral over S and that X is logarithmically flat over S. Let $\tau : Y \to X$ be the logarithmic modification associated with a saturated section α of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Then $\tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$.*

Proof. We have a commutative diagram with exact rows:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{O}_X^* & \longrightarrow & M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y^* & \longrightarrow & \tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \tau_* \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{R}^1 \tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y^* \end{array}$$

The map $\mathcal{O}_X^* \to \tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y^*$ is an isomorphism by Proposition 4.4.13.1. The map $\tau_*(\overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}) / \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{R}^1 \tau_* \mathcal{O}_Y^*$ is an isomorphism by Proposition 4.4.7. We conclude that $M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is an isomorphism by the snake lemma and the five lemma. □

Proof of Proposition 4.4.8. We make an observation that we will use repeatedly in the proof. The phrase 'the proposition holds for $\tau : Y \to X$' will mean that if X is logarithmically flat over S then every étale M_Y^{gp}-torsor descends uniquely along τ to an M_X^{gp}-torsor. Suppose that we have logarithmic modifications $Z \xrightarrow{\rho} Y \xrightarrow{\tau} X$ and that the proposition is known to hold for ρ. If X is logarithmically flat over S then so is Y, because Y is a logarithmic modification of X. Therefore, étale M_Y^{gp}-torsors descend uniquely along τ to M_X^{gp}-torsors if and only if étale M_Z^{gp}-torsors descend uniquely along $\tau\rho$ to M_X^{gp}-torsors. Indeed, if L is an M_Y^{gp}-torsor then it is the unique descent of $\rho^* L$ to Y (since the proposition is known for ρ and Y is logarithmically flat over S), so $\rho^* L$ descends uniquely to X if and only if L descends uniquely to X.

Assume that X is logarithmically flat over a valuative logarithmic scheme S and $\tau : Y \to X$ is a logarithmic modification. We wish to show that every M_Y^{gp}-torsor descends uniquely to an M_X^{gp}-torsor. This is a local question in the étale topology of X, so we assume that X is quasicompact and has a global chart by a sharp monoid P. Let σ be the rational polyhedral cone

[4] The assertion is Zariski local in X', so we may assume that X' is affine. Then $\Gamma(X', \mathrm{R}\rho_* \mathcal{O}_{Y'}) = \mathrm{R}\Gamma(Y', \mathcal{O}_{Y'})$, so we may apply flat base change [Sta18, Tag 02KH].

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

dual to P. Since X is quasicompact, every logarithmic modification of X has a refinement that is induced from a subdivision of σ. Every subdivision of σ has a refinement that is an iterated subdivision along hyperplanes. We can therefore find a logarithmic modification $\rho : Z \to Y$ such that both ρ and $\tau\rho$ are iterated subdivisions along hyperplanes. By the observation above, it is therefore sufficient to prove the proposition when Y is an iterated subdivision of X by hyperplanes. By induction and another application of the observation, it suffices to assume Y is a subdivision along a single hyperplane.

We now assume X has a global chart and that $\tau : Y \to X$ is a hyperplane subdivision of X associated with some $\alpha \in \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$. By Lemma 4.4.11.5, there exist a root stack $\rho : X' \to X$ and an integer $n > 0$ such that $n^{-1}\alpha \in \Gamma(X', \overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ and $n^{-1}\alpha$ is saturated. Let $\tau' : Y' \to X'$ and $\rho' : Y' \to Y$ be the morphisms induced by base change. Note that Y' is the logarithmic modification of X' associated with the section $n^{-1}\alpha \in \Gamma(X', M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$.

We know by Proposition 4.4.6 that $M_{Y'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsors descend uniquely to Y. Therefore, by the observation from the beginning, our conclusion holds for τ if and only if it holds for $\tau\rho'$. But we also know by Proposition 4.4.7 that every $M_{Y'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor descends uniquely to an $\tau'_* M_{Y'}$-torsor on X'. On the other hand, both X' and Y' are integral over S since S is valuative and all morphisms to a valuative logarithmic scheme are integral, so $\tau'_* M_{Y'}^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ by Lemma 4.4.13.2. Finally, every $M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor descends uniquely to a M_X^{gp}-torsor by Proposition 4.4.6 again. □

4.4.14 *Applications.*

Corollary 4.4.14.1. *Suppose that $\tau : Y \to X$ is a subdivision of logarithmic curves over S. Then every M_Y^{gp}-torsor on Y descends uniquely to an M_X^{gp}-torsor on X.*

Proof. Since a subdivision of logarithmic curves $\tau : Y \to X$ can be presented étale-locally in X as an iterated subdivision associated with a saturated section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$, it suffices to consider only the case where Y is the subdivision of X associated with a single global section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. In this case, Proposition 4.4.7 implies that every M_Y^{gp}-torsor descends uniquely to a $\tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on X. By Lemma 4.4.13.2, we have $\tau_* M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$, so we may conclude. □

Corollary 4.4.14.2. *Suppose that X is a logarithmic curve over a logarithmic scheme S. Then* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *and* $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *satisfy descent with respect to fppf covers and root stacks of S. If S is logarithmically flat then* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *and* $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *also satisfy descent with respect to logarithmic modifications. In particular,* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *is a stack, and* $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *is a sheaf, in the Kummer logarithmic flat topology on S. If S is logarithmically flat then* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *is a stack, and* $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *is a sheaf, in the small full logarithmic étale topology on S.*

Proof. The Kummer logarithmic flat topology is generated by fppf covers and root stacks. The logarithmic étale topology is generated by étale covers, logarithmic modifications, and root stacks of order prime to the characteristic [Nak17, Lemma 3.11]. Therefore, it will suffice to show descent with respect to fppf covers, root stacks, and logarithmic modifications.

We know from Propositions 4.4.5, 4.4.6, and 4.4.8 that $\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ satisfies descent with respect to fppf covers, root stacks, and (if S is logarithmically flat) logarithmic modifications. Since $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is isomorphic to $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \times \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ étale-locally in S, the statements concerning $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ and $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ are equivalent. We will prove the statements involving $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$.

Any fppf cover, root stack, or logarithmic modification of S pulls back to an fppf cover, root stack, or logarithmic modification of X. Since X is logarithmically flat over S, it will be logarithmically flat if S is. We have just seen in the last paragraph (with S replaced by X) that

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

M_X^{gp}-torsors satisfy descent along all of these kinds of covers. Therefore, all that is left is to see that boundedness of monodromy satisfies descent with respect to strict fppf covers, root stacks, and logarithmic modifications of S.

By Proposition 4.3.2, boundedness of monodromy can be verified at the valuative geometric points of S, so we are free to assume S is a valuative geometric point. It is immediate that boundedness of monodromy descends along fppf covers, since the condition only depends on the characteristic monoid. Valuative geometric points have no nontrivial logarithmic modifications, so descent in that case is also trivial. Finally, Lemma 2.1.3.2 says that boundedness of monodromy descends along root stacks. □

The following corollary of Proposition 4.4.7 complements Theorem 2.4.1.3.

COROLLARY 4.4.14.3. *Let S be the spectrum of a valuation ring with generic point η and let X be a family of nodal curves over S. Assume that X_η and η have been given logarithmic structures M_{X_η} and M_η making X_η into a logarithmic curve over η, with M_η valuative. Let M_X and M_S be the maximal extensions, respectively, of M_{X_η} and M_η to X and to S. Let $j : X_\eta \to X$ be the inclusion of the generic fiber. Then $R^1 j_* M_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}} = 0$.*

Proof. We wish to show that any $M_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor can be trivialized étale-locally on X. Suppose that L_η is an $M_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor. Since the base has a valuative logarithmic structure, Corollary 4.3.1 implies that there is a logarithmic modification $\tilde{X}_\eta$ of X_η on which L_η is representable by an invertible sheaf $\tilde{L}_\eta$. We can extend this logarithmic modification to a logarithmic modification $\tilde{X}$ of X. Now, $\tilde{L}_\eta$ can be represented by a divisor D_η in the smooth locus of $\tilde{X}_\eta$. After replacing $\tilde{X}$ by a further logarithmic modification, we can assume that the closure of D_η in $\tilde{X}$ is contained in the smooth locus. Thus, $\tilde{L}_\eta$ extends to an invertible sheaf on $\tilde{X}$. Note that $\tilde{X}$ is an iterated subdivision of X associated with saturated sections of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Passing to the associated $M_{\tilde{X}}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor, and applying Corollary 4.4.14.1, every $M_{\tilde{X}}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on $\tilde{X}$ descends uniquely to a M_X^{gp}-torsor on X. It follows that the $M_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor L_η extends to an M_X^{gp}-torsor L. Since the M_X^{gp}-torsor L can be trivialized étale-locally, it follows that L_η can be trivialized étale-locally in X as well. □

4.5 Degree

Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S, whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field with a valuative logarithmic structure. We construct a dashed arrow making the following diagram commute:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(X, \mathcal{O}_X^*) & \longrightarrow & \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X) \\ & \searrow & \downarrow & & \downarrow {\scriptstyle \deg} \\ & & \mathbf{Z}^V & \xrightarrow{\ \Sigma\ } & \mathbf{Z} \end{array} \tag{4.5.1}$$

Here, V is the set of vertices of the dual graph of X, so $\mathbf{Z}^V$ is the Néron–Severi group of X, and the solid vertical arrow is the multidegree. The map $\Sigma : \mathbf{Z}^V \to \mathbf{Z}$ is the sum. We regard a section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ as a piecewise linear, $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$-valued function on the dual graph of X, with integer slopes along the edges. The diagonal map to $\mathbf{Z}^V$ sends such a function to a tuple each of whose components is the sum of the outgoing slopes from the corresponding vertex of the dual graph. The composed map to $\mathbf{Z}$ therefore takes the sum of the outgoing slopes from every vertex; since each edge gets counted twice with opposite orientations (X is vertical, so its dual graph is compact) the composition is zero. This gives the vertical arrow on the image of $H^1(X, \mathcal{O}_X^*)$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Given any logarithmic line bundle L on X, Corollary 4.3.1 implies that there is a logarithmic modification $\tilde{X}$ of X such that the restriction $\tilde{L}$ of L to $\tilde{X}$ lies in the image of $H^1(\tilde{X}, \mathcal{O}^*_{\tilde{X}})$. We define the degree of L to be the degree of any invertible sheaf $\tilde{L}$ representing L on any logarithmic modification of X.

This defines the degree at all *valuative, geometric* points of $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$. The following proposition extends the definition to families.

Proposition 4.5.2. *The degree of a logarithmic line bundle is well defined and locally constant on* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$.

Proof. Suppose that L is a logarithmic line bundle on a logarithmic curve X over S. We can find a logarithmic modification $\tilde{S}$ and a semistable model $\tilde{X}$ of $X \times_S \tilde{S}$ such that L can be represented by an invertible sheaf on $\tilde{X}$. By construction, the total degree of this invertible sheaf is the degree of $\tilde{L}$, the pullback of L to $\tilde{X}$. Since the total degree of an invertible sheaf is locally constant, so is the total degree of $\tilde{L}$. It follows that the degree, as defined above, is locally constant and well defined on $\tilde{S}$. But $\tilde{S} \to S$ is surjective, and every valuative geometric point of S lifts to $\tilde{S}$, so the degree is also well defined on S. Furthermore, $\tilde{S} \to S$ is closed, so a function on S that pulls back to a locally constant function on $\tilde{S}$ must have been locally constant on S. Therefore, the total degree of L on S is also locally constant. □

Definition 4.5.3. We write $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^d(X/S)$ for the open and closed substack of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ parameterizing isomorphism classes of $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsors with bounded monodromy and degree d.

4.6 Quotient presentation

We construct a quotient presentation of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^0(X/S)$. Over the strata of S, this produces a logarithmic abelian variety with *constant degeneration*, in the terminology of Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama [KKN08c, KKN08b, KKN13, KKN15] (see § 4.7). Our presentation is inspired by that of Kajiwara [Kaj93].

Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S, with connected geometric fibers. Write $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ for the multidegree-0 part of $\mathrm{Pic}^0(X/S)$.

Lemma 4.6.1. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S with connected geometric fibers. Then the natural map $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is an isomorphism.*

Proof. This assertion is étale-local in S. We can therefore assume that S is atomic and that the dual graph of X is constant on the closed stratum. We denote it $\mathscr{X}$. Now $H^0(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is the group of piecewise linear function on $\mathscr{X}$ having integer slopes along the edges and taking values in $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Since sections of M_X^{gp} correspond generically on X to rational functions, the associated piecewise linear function on $\mathscr{X}$ of such a section will be *linear*. That is, the sum of the outgoing slopes along the edges incident to any vertex of $\mathscr{X}$ will be zero.

On the other hand, $\mathscr{X}$ is compact so every linear function on $\mathscr{X}$ is constant by Lemma 3.4.5. Therefore, the section of $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induced from any section of M_X^{gp} lies in the image $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, which is to say that there is a diagonal arrow as shown in the following commutative diagram with exact rows:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \to & \mathcal{O}_S^* & \to & M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} & \to & \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} & \to & 0 \\ & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & \nearrow & \downarrow & & \\ 0 & \to & \pi_*\mathcal{O}_X^* & \to & \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \to & \pi_*\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \to & R^1\pi_*\mathcal{O}_X^* \end{array} \tag{4.6.1.1}$$

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

As X is proper and flat over S with reduced, connected fibers, the map $\mathcal{O}_S^* \to \pi_*\mathcal{O}_X^*$ is an isomorphism. We may therefore conclude by the five lemma, applied to the following induced diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \longrightarrow & \mathcal{O}_S^* & \longrightarrow & M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \downarrow\wr & & \downarrow & & \downarrow\wr & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \pi_*\mathcal{O}_X^* & \longrightarrow & \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \pi_*\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & & \end{array} \tag{4.6.1.2}$$

□

PROPOSITION 4.6.2. *The map $R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induces a surjection from the multidegree-0 part onto the degree-0 part, with kernel $H_1(\mathscr{X})$.*

Proof. We may assume without loss of generality that X has connected geometric fibers over S. We use the exact sequence

$$0 \to \pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \tag{4.6.2.1}$$

and its associated long exact sequence in the top row of the following diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \longrightarrow & \pi_*\overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{R}^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{R}^1\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \downarrow\wr & & \downarrow & & \vdots & & \\ & & \mathbf{Z}^E & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Z}^V & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Z} & \longrightarrow & 0 \end{array} \tag{4.6.2.2}$$

Here $\mathbf{Z}^V$ is the sheaf of abelian groups freely generated by the irreducible components of the fibers, and $\mathbf{Z}^E$ is the sheaf whose stalks are freely generated by the nodes. When a node is smoothed in X, the corresponding generator of the stalk of $\mathbf{Z}^E$ maps to zero under the generization map.

Note that the first map in the first row of (4.6.2.1) is injective because $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is an isomorphism by Lemma 4.6.1. A section of $\mathrm{R}^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induces isomorphism classes of line bundles on the components of X and therefore has a well-defined multidegree. This gives the vertical homomorphism in the middle term of diagram (4.6.2.2).

By an explicit calculation, the map $\pi_*\overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ commutes with the boundary map $\mathbf{Z}^E \to \mathbf{Z}^V$ computing the homology of the dual graph of X. Therefore, we recover the degree homomorphism by passing to cokernels, as indicated by the dashed arrow in (4.6.2.2).

We write $\mathrm{R}^1\pi_*(\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}})^{[0]}$ for the multidegree-0 part of $\mathrm{R}^1\pi_*(\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$ and $\mathrm{R}^1\pi_*(M_X^{\mathrm{gp}})^0$ for the degree-0 part of $\mathrm{R}^1\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ (in other words, the kernels of the center and right vertical arrows of diagram (4.6.2.2)). It follows from the snake lemma that the map

$$\mathrm{R}^1\pi_*(\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}})^{[0]} \to \mathrm{R}^1\pi_*(M_X^{\mathrm{gp}})^0 \tag{4.6.2.3}$$

is surjective with kernel $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. □

COROLLARY 4.6.3. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Let $R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$ denote the sheaf on logarithmic schemes over S whose value on a logarithmic scheme T over S is $R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$, where π abusively denotes the projection $X_T \to T$. There is an exact sequence*

$$0 \to H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger} \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) \to 0$$

where $R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger}$ is the bounded monodromy, multidegree-0 subsheaf of $R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

4.7 Semiabelian structure

We assume that X is a family of logarithmic curves over S with constant degeneracy. That is, the characteristic monoid of S is constant, as is the dual graph of X. Let X^ν be the normalization of the nodes of X. We have an exact sequence

$$0 \to T \to \mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X^\nu/S) \to 0 \tag{4.7.1}$$

where T is the torus $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_m)$ and $\mathscr{X}$ is the dual graph of X.

We obtain a similar sequence with $\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ in place of $\mathcal{O}_X^*$. The short exact sequence

$$0 \to \mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}^* \to \nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \nu^*\pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \tag{4.7.2}$$

yields the long exact sequence

$$\pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1(\pi_*\nu_*)\mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}^* \to R^1(\pi_*\nu_*)\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1(\pi_*\nu_*)\nu^*\pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \tag{4.7.3}$$

As $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is surjective, so is $\pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Furthermore, the components of X^ν are irreducible curves over S, so they have no first cohomology valued in $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ because it is torsion-free and constant on the fibers. The sequence therefore reduces to an isomorphism between $R^1(\pi_*\nu_*)\mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}^*$ and $R^1(\pi_*\nu_*)\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. That is, we have an isomorphism between $\mathrm{Pic}(X^\nu/S)$ and the functor $T \mapsto \Gamma(T, R^1\pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}})$ on logarithmic schemes over S.

By pullback, we therefore obtain a morphism

$$R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\nu_*\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \simeq \mathrm{Pic}(X^\nu/S). \tag{4.7.4}$$

The kernel of this morphism consists of those M_S^{gp}-torsors on X that are trivial when restricted to X^ν. Such a torsor is specified by transition functions in M_S^{gp} along the nodes of X and the kernel may therefore be identified with $T^{\log} = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_{\log})$.

Passing to the multidegree-0 parts of $R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and $\mathrm{Pic}(X^\nu/S)$, we get an exact sequence

$$0 \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_{\log}) \to R^1\pi_*(\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}})^{[0]} \to \mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X^\nu/S) \to 0 \tag{4.7.5}$$

4.8 Local description of the homology action

We retain the assumptions of § 4.7 and permit further étale localization in S.

Because we have assumed the logarithmic structure of S is constant, $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a constant sheaf of finitely generated free abelian groups. Working locally in S, we can assume that $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is split, and therefore that $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \simeq \mathcal{O}_S^* \times \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. We fix one such splitting $m : \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, splitting the surjection $M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Using this, we get a splitting $\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}} = \mathcal{O}_X^* \times \pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and therefore also a splitting

$$R^1\pi_*\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log} \simeq \mathrm{Pic}(X/S) \times \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) \tag{4.8.1}$$

We have used the canonical identification $R^1\pi_*\pi^*\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log} \simeq \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$.

Our goal in this subsection is to explain the map $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to R^1\pi_*\pi^*(\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]}$ from Corollary 4.6.3, which is induced from $\mathbf{Z}^E \to R^1\pi_*\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log}$, in terms of this splitting. Given $\alpha \in \Gamma(X, M_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathbf{Z}^E$, we write $\pi^* M_S(\alpha)$ for its image in $R^1\pi_*\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log}$.

We work out the pullback of $\pi^* M_S(\alpha)$ to the normalization X^ν of X along its nodes. We let $\mathscr{X}^\nu$ be the union of the stars of $\mathscr{X}$. In a sense that we do not make precise here, this is the tropicalization of X^ν when X^ν is given the logarithmic structure pulled back from X. Every section α of $\mathbf{Z}^E = \Gamma(X, \overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ can be lifted to a section $\tilde{\alpha}$ of $\overline{M}_{X^\nu}^{\mathrm{gp}}$, which can also be regarded as a piecewise linear function on $\mathscr{X}^\nu$. Then $\nu^*\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}(\alpha)$ is represented by the line bundle $\mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}(\tilde{\alpha})$. Note that the isomorphism class of $\mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}(\tilde{\alpha})$ depends only on α because $\tilde{\alpha}$ is uniquely determined

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

up to the addition of a constant from $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ on each component, and the addition of a constant only changes $\mathcal{O}_{X^\nu}(\tilde{\alpha})$ by a line bundle pulled back from S.

Suppose that $X_0 \subset X^\nu$ is a component and $\mathscr{X}_0$ is the corresponding component of $\mathscr{X}^\nu$. Then we have

$$\mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\tilde{\alpha}) = \mathcal{O}_{X_0}\left(\sum \alpha_e D_e\right). \tag{4.8.2}$$

The sum is taken over the edges e of $\mathscr{X}_0$, with D_e denoting the node of X corresponding to e, and α_e denoting the slope of α along e when e is oriented away from the central vertex of $\mathscr{X}_0$. In order to understand $\pi^* M_S(\alpha)$, we will need to see how the line bundles $\mathcal{O}_{X_i}(\tilde{\alpha})$ on the components of X^ν are glued to one another.

Recall that $m : \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ denotes a fixed splitting. For each $\delta \in \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, we write $m^\delta : \mathcal{O}_X \to \mathcal{O}_X(\delta)$ for map sending $\lambda \in \mathcal{O}_X$ to $\lambda m(\delta) \in \mathcal{O}_X(\delta)$. Suppose that D is a node of X joining components X_0 and X_1 and let e be the corresponding edge of $\mathscr{X}$. Recall that we have

$$\begin{aligned} &\mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D = \mathcal{O}_D(\tilde{\alpha}(0)) \otimes \mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\alpha_e D)|_D \quad \text{and} \\ &\mathcal{O}_{X_1}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D = \mathcal{O}_D(\tilde{\alpha}(1)) \otimes \mathcal{O}_{X_1}(-\alpha_e D)|_D \end{aligned} \tag{4.8.3}$$

where α_e is the slope of α along the edge e of $\mathscr{X}$ corresponding to D, oriented from 0 to 1, and $\tilde{\alpha}(i) \in \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is the value of $\tilde{\alpha}$ on the vertex i of $\mathscr{X}$. Using the trivializations m, we obtain an isomorphism

$$m^{\alpha_e \delta} : \mathcal{O}_{X_1}(-\alpha_e D)|_D \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{O}_{X_1}(-\alpha_e D + \alpha_e \delta) = \mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\alpha_e D)|_D. \tag{4.8.4}$$

Combined with the trivializations $m^{\tilde{\alpha}(0)}$ and $m^{\tilde{\alpha}(1)}$ of $\mathcal{O}_D(\tilde{\alpha}(0))$ and $\mathcal{O}_D(\tilde{\alpha}(1))$, we obtain an isomorphism

$$m^{\tilde{\alpha}(1) - \tilde{\alpha}(0) - \alpha_e \delta} : \mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathcal{O}_{X_1}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D. \tag{4.8.5}$$

We glue $\mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\tilde{\alpha})$ to $\mathcal{O}_{X_1}(\tilde{\alpha})$ along D by this isomorphism and repeat the same process for each edge of $\mathscr{X}$ to produce a line bundle $L(\alpha, m)$ on X. Note that $L(\alpha, m)$ depends on $\tilde{\alpha}$ only up to a canonical isomorphism determined by the trivialization m, so we omit the dependence on $\tilde{\alpha}$ from the notation.

Remark 4.8.6. We could have chosen $\tilde{\alpha}$ canonically to take the value 0 at every vertex of $\mathscr{X}^\nu$, but the added flexibility will be useful in the proof of Proposition 4.8.8.

Remark 4.8.7. If $\tilde{\alpha}$ were actually well defined on $X_{01} = X_0 \cup_D X_1$ then $\tilde{\alpha}(1) - \tilde{\alpha}(0) = \alpha_e \delta_e$, where δ_e is the length of e. Then $m^{\tilde{\alpha}(1) - \tilde{\alpha}(0)} = m^{\alpha_e \delta_e}$, so the isomorphisms above agree with the canonical identification $\mathcal{O}_{X_0}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D = \mathcal{O}_{X_{01}}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D = \mathcal{O}_{X_1}(\tilde{\alpha})|_D$.

PROPOSITION 4.8.8. *The isomorphism* (4.8.1) *sends* $\pi^* M_S(\alpha)$ *to* $(L(\alpha, m), -\partial(\alpha))$.

Proof. The second component of the formula is implied by Lemma 3.4.7. It can also be deduced from the argument below.

Let $\tilde{\mathscr{X}}$ be the universal cover of $\mathscr{X}$ and let $\rho : \tilde{X} \to X$ be the corresponding étale cover. The fundamental group of $\mathscr{X}$ acts by deck transformations on $\tilde{X}$. Since $H_1(\tilde{\mathscr{X}}) = 0$, we can find a lift of $\tilde{\alpha}$ to $\overline{M}_{\tilde{X}}$. Without loss of generality, we can assume that the function on X^ν constructed before the statement of the proposition is induced from this $\tilde{\alpha}$ by restriction along some embedding $X^\nu \subset \tilde{X}$.

By construction, $\rho^* L(\alpha, m)$ induces $\rho^* \pi^* M_S(\alpha)$. We will prove that $\pi^* M_S(\alpha) = (L(\alpha, m), \partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma)$ by comparing their transition data on the cover $\tilde{X}$.

If $\gamma \in \pi_1(\mathscr{X})$ then γ acts by deck transformations on $\tilde{X}$ and we have a canonical identification

$$\gamma^* \mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}}(\tilde{\alpha}) = \mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}}(\gamma^* \tilde{\alpha}) = \mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}}(\tilde{\alpha}) \otimes \mathcal{O}_X(\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma).$$

By definition, we have an inclusion $\mathcal{O}_X^*(\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma)$ inside $\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ as the fiber over $-\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma \in \pi^* \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. This gives us a canonical identification $\gamma^* \rho^* \pi^* M_S(\tilde{\alpha}) = \rho^* \pi^* M_S(\tilde{\alpha})$ that serves as a descent datum for $\rho^* \pi^* M_S(\tilde{\alpha})$ from $\tilde{X}$ to $\pi^* M_S(\tilde{\alpha})$ on X.

In terms of the splitting m, the map from $\mathcal{O}_X^*(\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma)$ to $\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is given by

$$(m^{-\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma}, -\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma) : \mathcal{O}_X^*(\partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma) \to \mathcal{O}_X^* \times \pi^* \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}. \tag{4.8.8.1}$$

The second component of this formula gives the homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ that makes up the second component of (4.8.1).

The transition function for $L(\alpha, m)$ around the loop γ is given by

$$\prod_e (m^{-\delta_e \alpha_e})^{\gamma_e} = m^{-\sum \alpha_e \gamma_e \delta_e}. \tag{4.8.8.2}$$

By definition of the intersection pairing, $\sum \alpha_e \gamma_e \delta_e = \partial(\alpha) \cdot \gamma$, so (4.8.8.2) agrees with the first component of (4.8.8.1). □

4.9 Tropicalizing the logarithmic Jacobian

For any proper, vertical logarithmic curve X over S, we construct a morphism

$$\operatorname{Log} \operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) \to \operatorname{Tro} \operatorname{Jac}(X/S) \tag{4.9.1}$$

over S. For each logarithmic scheme T and object of $\operatorname{Log} \operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$, we must produce a section of $\operatorname{Tro} \operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$. By Corollary 4.2.3, it is sufficient to do this when T is of finite type. Under this assumption, the T-points of $\operatorname{Tro} \operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$ are generization-compatible objects of $\operatorname{Tro} \operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}_t)$, for each geometric point t of T. We therefore describe the morphism first under the assumption that X has constant dual graph over S and S has constant characteristic monoid (which covers the case of a geometric point) and then discuss generization.

If X has constant dual graph and S has constant characteristic monoid, we use the following commutative diagram of exact sequences:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc}
0 & \longrightarrow & H_1(\mathscr{X}) & \longrightarrow & H^1(X, \pi^* \mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger} & \longrightarrow & \operatorname{Log} \operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) & \longrightarrow & 0 \\
 & & \| & & \downarrow & & \vdots & & \\
 & & \| & & H^1(X, \pi^* \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger & & \vdots & & \\
 & & \| & & \| & & \downarrow & & \\
0 & \longrightarrow & H_1(\mathscr{X}) & \longrightarrow & \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & \operatorname{Tro} \operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) & \longrightarrow & 0
\end{array} \tag{4.9.2}$$

The first row of the diagram comes from Corollary 4.6.3 and the bottom row is the definition of the tropical Jacobian from § 3.6. The identification between $H^1(X, \pi^* \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ and $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ comes from the fact that $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a torsion-free sheaf: since a smooth, proper curve has no nontrivial torsors under such a sheaf, any such torsor on a nodal curve can be trivialized on its normalization, and torsors under $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ on X are determined uniquely by monodromy around the loops of the dual graph. A unique dashed arrow exists by the universal property of the cokernel.

We show now that this morphism is compatible with generizations. Any specialization $s \rightsquigarrow t$ in $\operatorname{Log} \operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ can be represented by a map $T \to \operatorname{Log} \operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ where T is a strictly henselian

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

valuation ring with some logarithmic structure, s is its generic point, and t is its closed point. This map gives a logarithmic curve $X_T = X \times_S T$ over T and an $M_{X_T}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor P on T with bounded monodromy and degree 0. Since $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is the quotient of $H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$ by a discrete group, we can lift P to a $\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor, Q, on X_T.

We now have the following commutative diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
H^1(X_t, \pi^* M_t^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longleftarrow & H^1(X_T, \pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \dashrightarrow & H^1(X_s, \pi^* M_s^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger \\
\downarrow & \swarrow & \downarrow & & \vdots \\
H^1(X_t, \pi^* \overline{M}_t^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longleftarrow & H^1(X_T, \pi^* \overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & H^1(X_s, \pi^* \overline{M}_s^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger \\
\| & & & & \| \\
\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_t), \overline{M}_t^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & & \dashrightarrow & & \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}_s), \overline{M}_s^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger
\end{array} \tag{4.9.3}$$

The commutativity of the trapezoid rendered in dotted arrows is precisely the compatibility of our map with generization.

Theorem 4.9.4. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. There is an exact sequence*

$$0 \to \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S) \to 0 \tag{4.9.4.1}$$

Proof. Applying the snake lemma to diagram (4.9.2), and identifying $H^1(X, \pi^*\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$, we see that the exactness of (4.9.4.1) is equivalent to that of the sequence

$$0 \to \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger} \to R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger \to 0 \tag{4.9.4.2}$$

We note that the bounded monodromy subgroup of $R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]}$ is simply the preimage of that in $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$, and that the multidegree-0 subgroup of $\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is the preimage of the multidegree-0 subgroup of $R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$. Therefore, it will be sufficient to demonstrate the exactness of the following sequence:

$$0 \to \operatorname{Pic}(X/S) \to R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log}) \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) \to 0 \tag{4.9.4.3}$$

This amounts to showing that, for each logarithmic scheme T over S, the following sequence is exact, where $Y = X \times_S T$:

$$0 \to R^1\pi_*\mathcal{O}_Y^* \to R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \tag{4.9.4.4}$$

The exact sequence (4.9.4.4) arises from the long exact sequence

$$\pi_*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_*\pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\mathcal{O}_Y^* \to R^1\pi_*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^1\pi_*\pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to R^2\pi_*\mathcal{O}_Y^* \tag{4.9.4.5}$$

associated with the short exact sequence

$$0 \to \mathcal{O}_Y^* \to \pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \tag{4.9.4.6}$$

We have $R^2\pi_*\mathcal{O}_Y^* = 0$ by Tsen's theorem. As $\pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a constant sheaf on the fibers and $M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is surjective, the map $\pi_*\pi^* M_T^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \pi_*\pi^*\overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is surjective as well. This gives the exactness of (4.9.4.4) and completes the proof. □

Corollary 4.9.5. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. For each degree d, the sheaf $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$ and the stack $\mathbf{Log}\,\mathbf{Pic}^d(X/S)$ are bounded.*

Proof. As $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$ is a torsor under $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$, it is sufficient to prove the corollary for $d = 0$. By the exact sequence (4.9.4.1), $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is a $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$-torsor over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

As both $\mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ and $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(X/S)$ are bounded – in the latter case by Corollary 3.10.5 – it follows that $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^0(X/S)$ is also bounded.

Finally, we note that $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}^d(X/S)$ is isomorphic, locally in S, to $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^d(X/S) \times \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$, so the conclusion follows from the boundedness of $\mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$. ☐

4.10 The valuative criterion for properness

Theorem 4.10.1. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Then $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to S$ satisfies the valuative criterion for properness (Theorem 2.2.5.2) over S.*

Proof. Let R be a valuation ring with a valuative logarithmic structure and with field of fractions K. We consider a lifting problem

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \operatorname{Spec} K & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \\ \downarrow & \nearrow & \downarrow \\ \operatorname{Spec} R & \longrightarrow & S \end{array} \qquad (4.10.1.1)$$

and show it has a unique solution. These data give us a logarithmic curve X_R over R and a $M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor P_K on X_K with bounded monodromy. Let $j : X_K \to X_R$ denote the inclusion.

By Theorem 2.4.1.3 and Corollary 4.4.14.3, we have that $R^1 j_* M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}} = 0$ and $M_{X_R}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to j_* M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is an isomorphism. These imply that the morphism of group stacks $\mathrm{B}M_{X_R}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to j_*\mathrm{B}M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induces isomorphisms on sheaves of isomorphism classes and sheaves of automorphisms, hence is an equivalence. Pushing forward to S gives

$$\pi_*\mathrm{B}M_{X_R}^{\mathrm{gp}} = j_*\pi_*\mathrm{B}M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}}. \qquad (4.10.1.2)$$

But a section of $j_*\pi_*\mathrm{B}M_{X_K}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a commutative square (4.10.1.1) (ignoring bounded monodromy), and a section of $\pi_*\mathrm{B}M_{X_R}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a diagonal arrow lifting it (again ignoring bounded monodromy).

To conclude, we check that if P_K has bounded monodromy then so does P_R. Let $\mathscr{X}_R$ be the tropicalization of X_R and let $\mathscr{X}_K$ be the tropicalization of X_K. Let $\overline{P}_K$ and $\overline{P}_R$ be the PL-torsors on $\mathscr{X}_K$ and $\mathscr{X}_R$ induced by P_K and P_R. Then the pullback of $\overline{P}_K$ along the contraction map $\mathscr{X}_R \to \mathscr{X}_K$ coincides with the extension of $\overline{P}_R$ along the map $\overline{M}_R^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_K^{\mathrm{gp}}$. That is, $\overline{P}_R \otimes_{\overline{M}_R^{\mathrm{gp}}} \overline{M}_K^{\mathrm{gp}}$ descends along $\mathscr{X}_R \to \mathscr{X}_K$, so it must have trivial monodromy around all loops of $\mathscr{X}_R$ collapsed in $\mathscr{X}_K$. This means that $\overline{P}_R$ has bounded monodromy. ☐

Remark 4.10.2. One can also argue using Proposition 4.3.2.

Since K has a valuative logarithmic structure, we may replace X_R with a semistable model so that P_K is representable by an invertible sheaf on X_K, and therefore by a divisor D_K. Over an étale extension K' of K it is possible to represent $D_{K'}$ as a sum of sections $\sigma_i : \operatorname{Spec} K' \to X_{K'}$. Let R' be the integral closure of R in K'. For each i there is a *universal* choice of semistable model $X'_{R'}$ such that σ_i extends to a section of the strict locus of $X'_{R'}$ over R'. Therefore, there is a universal choice of semistable model $X''_{R'} \to X_{R'}$ such that the closure of $D_{K'}$ lies in the strict locus of $X''_{R'}$. Since this model is characterized by a universal property, it descends to a semistable model $X''_R \to X_R$ such that the closure D_R of D_K lies in the strict locus over R. But then $\mathcal{O}_{X''_R}(D_R)$ represents a $M_{X_R}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor extending P_K. Logarithmic line bundles that are representable by invertible sheaves have bounded monodromy.

This proves the universal closedness part of the valuative criterion, but the choice of $\mathcal{O}_{X''_R}(D_R)$ depends on the choice of D_K, so further argument is necessary to prove separatedness.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

COROLLARY 4.10.3. *The projection* $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to S$ *satisfies the valuative criterion for properness.*

Proof. Locally in S the projection $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ has a section making $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ into a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor over S. But $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ satisfies the valuative criterion for properness, so $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ does as well. □

Once we have demonstrated the algebraicity of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^d$, we will be able to conclude that it is proper in Corollary 4.12.5.

4.11 Existence of a smooth cover

DEFINITION 4.11.1. We call a presheaf X on logarithmic schemes a *logarithmic space* if there exist a logarithmic scheme U and a morphism $U \to X$ that is surjective on valuative geometric points and representable by logarithmically smooth logarithmic schemes.

THEOREM 4.11.2. *Let X be a proper logarithmic curve over S. Then there exist a logarithmic scheme and a universally surjective, logarithmically smooth morphism to* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X)$ *that is representable by logarithmic spaces.*

Proof. We consider a map $T \to S$ that is a composition of étale maps and logarithmic modifications. Let Y be a semistable model of $X \times_S T$ over T. Then $\mathbf{Pic}(Y/T)$ is representable by an algebraic stack over T. When equipped with the logarithmic structure pulled back from T, we have a morphism to $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$:

$$\mathbf{Pic}(Y/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(Y/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X_T/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \qquad (4.11.2.1)$$

We will argue that these maps are a logarithmically étale cover of $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ using the following lemma.

LEMMA 4.11.3. *For any logarithmic curve Y over T, the map* $\mathbf{Pic}(Y/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(Y/T)$ *is representable by logarithmic spaces and is logarithmically étale.*

Granting this lemma, we complete the proof of Theorem 4.11.2.

We show first of all that $\mathbf{Pic}(Y/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is representable by logarithmic schemes and is logarithmically étale. The first arrow in the sequence (4.11.2.1) has these properties by Lemma 4.11.3, the second is an isomorphism by Corollary 4.4.14.1 and Lemma 3.5.3, and the last arrow is the base change of the logarithmically étale morphism $T \to S$, by definition. Their composition is therefore representable by logarithmic schemes and is logarithmically étale.

Proposition 4.3.2 implies that, as T and Y vary over logarithmic modifications of étale covers of S and semistable models of X_T, respectively, the maps $\mathbf{Pic}(Y/T) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ are surjective on valuative geometric points. This completes the proof. □

Proof of Lemma 4.11.3. We wish to show that, for any logarithmic scheme T' over T, and any logarithmic line bundle L on $Y' = Y \times_T T'$, there exist a universal logarithmic scheme U over T' and a lift of $L|_U$ to an invertible sheaf on $Y \times_T U$. Without loss of generality, we can assume that $T = T'$ to lighten the notation.

The logarithmic line bundle L on Y is a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor. It induces a $\mathbf{G}_m^{\mathrm{trop}}$-torsor $\overline{L}$ via the map $M_Y^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_Y^{\mathrm{gp}}$, and this torsor obstructs lifting L to a $\mathbf{G}_m$-torsor, in the sense that sections of $\overline{L}$ are in natural bijection with lifts. Let us write $\pi_* \overline{L}$ for the presheaf on logarithmic schemes over T whose value on T' is $\Gamma(Y', \overline{L}')$, where Y' is the base change of Y to T' and $\overline{L}'$ is the pullback of $\overline{L}$ to a $\mathbf{G}_m^{\mathrm{trop}}$-torsor on Y'. We need to demonstrate that $\pi_* \overline{L}$ is representable by a logarithmic space that is strict and logarithmically étale over T.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

It is sufficient to prove that $\pi_*\overline{L}$ is representable by a logarithmic space that is logarithmically étale over T in an étale neighborhood of each geometric point t of T. We will therefore assume that T is affine and has a global chart by $\overline{M}_{T,t}$. Since $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(Y/T)$ is locally of finite presentation (Proposition 4.2.2), there is a morphism $T \to T_0$, a logarithmic curve $\pi_0 : Y_0 \to T_0$, and a logarithmic line bundle L_0 on Y_0 that pulls back to L. Then $\pi_{0*}\overline{L}_0$ pulls back to $\pi_*\overline{L}$ by proper base change. If $\pi_{0*}\overline{L}_0$ is representable by a logarithmically étale logarithmic space over T_0 then $\pi_*\overline{L}$ will be representable by its base change to T. Hence we may replace T and Y by T_0 and Y_0. We therefore assume without loss of generality that T is of finite type in addition to being affine. Since T is of finite type, and our problem is étale-local on T, we can also assume that T is an atomic neighborhood of t. That is, we assume T has a global chart by $\overline{M}_{T,t}$ and the logarithmic stratum of T containing t is connected. After further étale localization, we assume as well that the dual graph of Y is constant on the stratum of T that contains t.

We give a combinatorial interpretation of $\pi_*\overline{L}$. Let Y_t be the fiber of Y over t and let $\mathscr{Y}$ be its dual graph. We write PL_t for the sheaf on $\mathscr{Y}$ that corresponds with $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{Y_t}$ on Y_t. Since $\overline{L}$ is constant on the logarithmic strata of Y (since these strata are normal and $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{Y}$ is constant and torsion-free), it descends to a PL_t-torsor $\mathscr{L}_t$ on $\mathscr{Y}$. For each geometric point t' of T, we have a homomorphism $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{T,t} \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{T,t'}$. This induces a homomorphism $\mathsf{PL}_t \to \mathsf{PL}_{t'}$ on $\mathscr{Y}$, and this induces a $\mathsf{PL}_{t'}$-torsor, $\mathscr{L}_{t'}$ on $\mathscr{Y}$.

To specify a section of $\pi_*\overline{L}$ at t' is the same as to give a section of $\mathscr{L}_{t'}$. To specify a section of $\pi_*\overline{L}$ on some logarithmic scheme T' over T is the same as to give a section of $\mathscr{L}_{t'}$ for every geometric point t' of T', in a fashion that is compatible with the maps $\mathscr{L}_{t'} \to \mathscr{L}_{t''}$ associated with geometric specializations $t'' \rightsquigarrow t'$. In other words, we may think of $\mathscr{L}$ as a sheaf on the constant family $\mathscr{Y} \times T$, and $\pi_*\overline{L} = \rho_*\mathscr{L}$, where $\rho : \mathscr{Y} \times Y \to T$ is the projection.

Since $\mathscr{L}$ is a sheaf, we have an exact sequence

$$0 \to \rho_*\mathscr{L} \to \prod_v \mathscr{L}_v \to \prod_e \mathscr{L}_e \tag{4.11.3.1}$$

Choose trivializations $\mathscr{L}_v \simeq \mathsf{PL}_v$ and $\mathscr{L}_e \simeq \mathsf{PL}_e$ over each vertex v, and each edge e, of $\mathscr{Y}$. If e is an edge of $\mathscr{Y}$ connecting vertices v and w then PL_e is the subgroup of $\mathsf{PL}_v \times \mathsf{PL}_w$ consisting of pairs (f, g) such that $f - g$ lies in the subgroup $\mathbf{Z}\delta_e$ generated by the length δ_e of e. Combining this observation with our trivializations and the isomorphism $\pi_*\overline{L} \simeq \rho_*\mathscr{L}$, the exact sequence (4.11.3.1) translates into a cartesian square:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \pi_*\overline{L} & \longrightarrow & \prod_{e\in E} \mathbf{Z}\delta_e \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \prod_{v\in V} \mathbf{G}_m^{\mathrm{trop}} & \longrightarrow & \prod_{e\in E} \mathbf{G}_m^{\mathrm{trop}} \end{array}$$

Thus, $\pi_*\overline{L}$ is a fiber product of logarithmic spaces that are logarithmically étale over T, hence is a logarithmic space that is logarithmically étale over T. □

Corollary 4.11.4. *There exist a logarithmic scheme W and a cover of $W \to \operatorname{Log Pic}(X/S)$ that is logarithmically smooth and representable by logarithmic spaces.*

Proof. Locally in S, we can identify $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) = \operatorname{Log Pic}(X/S) \times \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ by identifying $\operatorname{Log Pic}(X/S)$ with the sheaf of logarithmic line bundles on X trivialized over a section. A section

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

$\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ makes $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ into a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-bundle over $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$. If $U \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ is a logarithmically smooth cover by a logarithmic scheme, then its pullback is a logarithmically smooth cover $W \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$, and W is a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor over the logarithmic scheme U, hence a logarithmic space. Replacing W by a logarithmically smooth cover, we can arrange for W to be a logarithmic scheme as required. □

COROLLARY 4.11.5. *The diagonals of* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *and* $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *are representable by logarithmic spaces.*

Proof. Let Z be $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ or $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$. We have a logarithmically smooth cover $U \to Z$ that is representable by logarithmic spaces. We wish to show that $W = V \times_{Z\times Z} Z$ is representable by logarithmic spaces whenever V is a logarithmic scheme with two maps to Z. But

$$W \underset{Z\times Z}{\times} (U \times U) = (V \underset{Z\times Z}{\times} (U \times U)) \underset{U\times U}{\times} (U \underset{Z}{\times} U)$$

is the fiber product of the logarithmic space $U \times_Z U$ with the logarithmic space $V \times_{Z\times Z} (U \times U)$ over the logarithmic scheme $U \times U$, hence is a logarithmic space. □

4.12 Representability of the diagonal

Our algebraicity result is slightly stronger for Log Pic.

THEOREM 4.12.1. *The diagonal of* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *over* S *is representable by finite morphisms of logarithmic schemes.*

In other words, we are to show that if X is a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S with two logarithmic line bundles L and L' then there is a universal logarithmic scheme T over S such that $L_T \simeq L'_T$ and, moreover, the underlying scheme of T is finite over that of S. This assertion only depends on the difference between L and L' in the group structure of Log Pic, so we can assume L' is trivial. The assertion is also local in the strict étale topology on S, so we freely replace S by an étale cover. By Corollary 4.10.3, the diagonal of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$ satisfies the valuative criterion for properness, so it will suffice to prove that the diagonal is schematic, quasicompact, and locally quasifinite. In fact, morphisms of algebraic spaces that are separated and locally quasifinite are schematic [Sta18, Tag 03XX], so we only need to show the diagonal is representable by algebraic spaces, locally quasifinite, and quasicompact.

LEMMA 4.12.2. *The relative diagonal of* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *over* S *is quasicompact.*

Proof. It is sufficient to demonstrate that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ has quasicompact diagonal over S. This assertion is local in the constructible topology on S, so we assume that the dual graph of X is constant over S and that $\overline{M}_S$ is a constant sheaf on S. Let $\mathscr{X}$ denote the tropicalization of X. In this situation, Corollary 4.6.3 gives an étale cover of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ by $V = R^1\pi_*(\pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger}$. By étale descent, it is sufficient to show that $V \times_{\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)} V \to V \times V$ is quasicompact.

We can recognize this map as the base change to $V \times V$ along $V \times V \to V : (v, w) \mapsto v - w$ of $H_1(\mathscr{X}) = \ker(V \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)) \to V$. It therefore suffices to demonstrate that $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to V$ is quasicompact.

Since $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ is separated, Theorem 4.9.4 implies that the map $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$ is separated, and in particular quasiseparated. By base change, the compatibility square (4.9.2) then shows that $V \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$ is also quasiseparated. Therefore, the quasicompactness of $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to V$ follows from the quasicompactness of $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$, which is Corollary 3.11.4. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Lemma 4.12.3. *Let S be a logarithmic scheme, let $\mathscr{X}$ be a compact tropical curve over S. Then the zero section of* $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ *is representable by logarithmic schemes of finite type that are, étale-locally in S, affine over $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \times_S \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ (viewing $H_1(\mathscr{X})$ as an étale sheaf over S and identifying it with its espace étalé).*

Proof. Suppose we are given a section $S \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$. Let Z be the pullback of the zero section of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ to S. We wish to show Z is representable by a logarithmic scheme that is of finite type over S and is affine over $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. This is an étale-local assertion on S, so we can work locally in S and assume $S \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ can be lifted to $S \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$. We can realize Z as the pullback of $\partial : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ to S. We therefore have

$$Z = S \underset{\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}),\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})}{\times} H_1(\mathscr{X}) = \bigcup_{\alpha \in H_1(\mathscr{X})} S \underset{\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}),\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})}{\times} \{\partial(\alpha)\}. \tag{4.12.3.1}$$

Here the union ranges over local sections α of $H_1(\mathscr{X})$ over S. But ∂ is quasicompact by Corollary 3.11.4, so, locally in S, we only need to consider finitely many of the $\alpha \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$. We can therefore assume there is a single α. We write Z_α for the component of Z that corresponds.

Locally in S, we can choose a surjection from a finitely generated free abelian group A onto $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. This induces an embedding $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}) \to \operatorname{Hom}(A, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$, which is a product of copies of $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$. Applying Proposition 2.2.7.5 on each copy, we get the result. □

Corollary 4.12.4. *Let S be a logarithmic scheme and let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Then the zero section of* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *is representable by logarithmic schemes that are of finite type and, étale-locally in S, affine over $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \times_S \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$, where $\mathscr{X}$ is the tropicalization of X.*

Proof. We use the exact sequence from Theorem 4.9.4. By Lemma 4.12.3, the map from $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ to $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is representable by logarithmic schemes of finite type and affine over $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. But the zero section of $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ is a closed embedding because $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ is separated and schematic over S; in particular, it is affine and of finite type. We deduce that the zero section of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is of finite type and is affine over $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. □

Proof of Theorem 4.12.1. The diagonal of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is the base change of the embedding of the zero section, so it is sufficient to demonstrate that the embedding of the zero section is finite. We have seen that it is of finite type in Corollary 4.12.4. Corollary 4.12.4 also shows that it is affine over an algebraic space that is étale over S. In particular, it has affine fibers. But it also satisfies the valuative criterion for properness by Corollary 4.10.3. Therefore, the fibers are both affine and proper, hence are finite. Since the zero section is also of finite type, it is therefore quasifinite. A quasifinite separated morphism is schematic [Sta18, Tag 03XX], so the zero section is schematic. Since it is quasifinite and proper, it is finite [Sta18, Tag 02LS]. □

Corollary 4.12.5. *For each integer d, the sheaf* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$ *and the stack* $\mathbf{Log}\,\mathbf{Pic}^d(X/S)$ *are proper over S.*

Proof. We have shown that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$ has finite diagonal by Theorem 4.12.1, is bounded by Corollary 4.9.5, and satisfies the valuative criterion by Theorem 4.10.1. The properness of $\mathbf{Log}\,\mathbf{Pic}^d(X/S)$ follows because it is a gerbe banded by the proper group $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ over $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$. □

Remark 4.12.6. Of course, the statements demonstrated here are all well known for the Picard group of a proper family of smooth curves. The separatedness of the Picard group implies that the diagonal is finite, by definition. However, the Picard stack of a proper family of smooth curves

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

is not separated because line bundles have the nonproper group $\mathbf{G}_m$ acting as automorphisms. This is resolved in the logarithmic Picard stack because the automorphism group of a logarithmic line bundle is the *proper* logarithmic group, $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$.

For a proper family of nodal curves, the Picard group can fail to be separated because of the possibility of twists by components of the special fiber.

4.13 Smoothness

THEOREM 4.13.1. *Let X be a logarithmic curve over S. Then* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *is logarithmically smooth.*

There are two parts to smoothness: the infinitesimal criterion and local finite presentation. Local finite presentation was addressed in Proposition 4.2.2.

LEMMA 4.13.2. $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)$ *satisfies the infinitesimal criterion for smoothness over S. Its logarithmic tangent stack is $\pi_* \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_a$, meaning isomorphism classes of deformations are a torsor under $H^1(X, \mathcal{O}_X)$ and automorphisms are in bijection with $H^0(X, \mathcal{O}_X)$.*

Proof. Consider a lifting problem

$$\begin{array}{ccc} T & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \\ \downarrow & \nearrow & \downarrow \\ T' & \longrightarrow & S \end{array} \tag{4.13.2.1}$$

in which T' is a strict infinitesimal square-zero extension of T. The lower horizontal arrow gives a logarithmic curve X' over T' with fiber X over T, and the upper horizontal arrow gives a logarithmic line bundle L on X. We wish to extend this to T'. It is sufficient to assume that T' is a square-zero extension with ideal J.

Let $\overline{L}$ be the $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor induced from L. As this is a torsor under an étale sheaf, and the étale sites of X and X' are identical, $\overline{L}$ extends uniquely to $\overline{L}'$. We therefore assume $\overline{L}'$ is fixed. We note that the bounded monodromy condition for a putative L' extending L depends only on $\overline{L}'$, and is equivalent to that for $\overline{L}$, hence is automatically satisfied.

We wish to show that $\overline{L}'$ can be lifted to an $M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor. Locally in X there is no obstruction to extending L to L'. If we take any two local extensions of L, their difference $L' \otimes L''^{\vee}$ is a $M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor whose restriction to X is trivialized, as is its induced $\overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor. Therefore, the $M_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor $L' \otimes L''^{\vee}$ is induced from a uniquely determined $\mathcal{O}_{X'}^*$-torsor extending the trivial one from X.

It follows that extensions of L form a gerbe on X banded by $\mathcal{O}_X \otimes J$. Obstructions to producing a lift – in other words, obstructions to producing a section of this gerbe – lie in $H^2(X, \mathcal{O}_X \otimes J)$, which vanishes locally in S because X is a curve over S. By the cohomological classification of banded gerbes, deformations form a torsor under $H^1(X, \mathcal{O}_X \otimes J)$ and automorphisms are in bijection with $H^0(X, \mathcal{O}_X \otimes J)$.

To get the logarithmic tangent space, we take a trivial extension T' of T by $J = \mathcal{O}_T$. Then isomorphisms between a given extension L' and the trivial extension form a torsor under the group of automorphisms of the trivial extension, $\mathbf{G}_a$. □

4.14 Tropicalizing the logarithmic Picard group

Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S and let $\mathscr{X}$ denote the tropicalization of X. We construct a tropicalization map

$$\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S). \tag{4.14.1}$$

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Since $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is locally constant on the logarithmic strata of S, our strategy will be to construct (4.14.1) stratumwise and then show its compatibility with generization.

Assume first that S has constant characteristic monoid and that the dual graph of X is constant over S. Under these assumptions, we have an anticontinuous tropicalization map $t : X \to \mathscr{X}$.

Suppose that Q is a M_X^{gp}-torsor on X. Let $\mathscr{U} \to \mathscr{X}$ be a local isomorphism and let $U = t^{-1}\mathscr{U}$. Let $\mathrm{NS}(U)$ denote the Néron–Severi group of U. Then NS is a functor on finite X-schemes and we observe that the sheaf V on $\mathscr{X}$ (whose sections are members of the free abelian group generated by the vertices) is isomorphic to $t_* \mathrm{NS}$. Combined with Lemma 2.4.2.4 and the exact sequence in the middle column of (3.4.1), this proves the following proposition.

Proposition 4.14.2. *Let X be a logarithmic curve over S, where S has constant characteristic monoid and X has constant dual graph. Let $\mathscr{X}$ be the tropicalization of X. Then the sheaf of linear functions L on $\mathscr{X}$ is quasi-isomorphic to $t_*[\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathrm{NS}]$.*

For the reader's convenience, we recall a few facts about strictly commutative 2-groups. Suppose that we have a short exact sequence of sheaves on a site T:

$$0 \longrightarrow K \xrightarrow{\ i\ } G \xrightarrow{\ q\ } H \longrightarrow 0$$

This induces a sequence of morphisms of 2-groups:

$$\cdots \longrightarrow H \longrightarrow \mathrm{B}K \longrightarrow \mathrm{B}G \longrightarrow \mathrm{B}H \longrightarrow \cdots$$

The connecting homomorphism $H \to BK$ takes an element $h \in H$ to its preimage $\{g \in G : q(g) = h\}$ in G; this is a coset of K and, in particular, a K-torsor when the embedding in G is forgotten. The remaining maps are given by extension of structure group: a G-torsor P induces an H-torsor P/K, and a K-torsor L similarly induces a G-torsor $L \times^K G = (L \times G)/K$, with the quotient taken by the antidiagonal action of K.

The sequence is 'long exact' in the sense that H is the kernel of $\mathrm{B}K \to \mathrm{B}G$, and $\mathrm{B}K$ is the kernel of $\mathrm{B}G \to \mathrm{B}H$. Explicitly, a K-torsor with a trivialization of its induced G-torsor is the same thing as a K-torsor with a K-equivariant map to G, which is to say a coset of K in G, that is, a section of H. Likewise, a G-torsor with a trivialization of its induced H-torsor is a G-torsor with a G-equivariant map to H; any such torsor admits a unique reduction to a K-torsor by taking the fiber over $0 \in H$.

We now specialize to the cases of interest, which are

- $K = \mathbf{G}_m, G = \mathbf{G}_{\log}, H = \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ on the logarithmic curve $X \to S$, and
- $K = \mathsf{L}, G = \mathsf{PL}, H = \mathsf{V}$ on the tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$.

We will write $\mathbf{G}_{\log} \otimes L$ for the $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor associated to a $\mathbf{G}_m$-torsor L, and $\overline{P}$ for the $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$-torsor associated to a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor P. The tropicalization map $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ arises from the relationship between $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ and PL. Since $t_*\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} = \mathsf{PL}$, and $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsors are, locally in S, trivial on the fibers of $t : X \to \mathscr{X}$ (namely, the strata of X), pushforward along t gives an equivalence

$$\mathrm{B}\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(X) \xrightarrow{\sim} \mathrm{B}\mathsf{PL}(\mathscr{X}) : \overline{P} \mapsto t_*\overline{P}.$$

Furthermore, if P is a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor on X, with induced $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$-torsor $\overline{P}$, then the fiber of P over a section α of $\overline{P}$ is a $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor, $P(\alpha)$. We obtain a map from $\overline{P}$ to the Néron–Severi presheaf NS sending α to the class of $P(\alpha)$. Since $t_*\,\mathrm{NS} = \mathsf{V}$, we obtain $t_*\overline{P} \to \mathsf{V}$. That is, the PL-torsor on $\mathscr{X}$ associated to a M_X^{gp}-torsor on X comes with a canonical trivialization of its induced V-torsor, hence descends uniquely to a L-torsor that we call $\mathrm{trop}(P)$. Explicitly, $\mathrm{trop}(P)$ is the L-torsor of

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

multidegree-0 lifts of P to an $\mathcal{O}_X^*$-torsor:[5]

$$\mathrm{trop}(P) = \{(L, \alpha : L^{\log} \xrightarrow{\sim} P) \mid \mathrm{multideg}(L) = 0\}.$$

In order to extend this construction to one valid over a general base, we will need to prove its compatibility with the generization maps for $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$, given by Proposition 3.8.2. Note that the bounded monodromy condition has not yet entered into the discussion; indeed, it only becomes necessary when considering families of nonconstant degeneracy.

Proposition 4.14.3. *Let X be a proper logarithmic curve over S and let s be a geometric point of S. Then $\pi_*(\mathrm{B}\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})_s \to \Gamma(X_s, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_s}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ is fully faithful and restricts to an isomorphism on the bounded monodromy subgroups.*

Proof. Full faithfulness follows from proper base change for étale cohomology [SGA4(3), Théorème 5.1(i) and (ii)], so the point is to prove surjectivity on the bounded monodromy subgroup. The assertion is étale-local in S, so we may assume that the logarithmic structure of S has a global chart. The chart gives a stratification of X into finitely many locally closed subschemes, and we can assume without loss of generality that only one is closed and that it contains s.

Suppose that $\overline{L}_s$ is an $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on X_s with bounded monodromy. We extend $\overline{L}_s$ to an $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on X inductively over the strata of S. By induction, we can assume that $\overline{L}_Z$ has already been constructed on a closed union of strata Z containing s and that the complement of Z in S is an open subset U on which $\overline{M}_S$ is constant. Let j denote the inclusion of U in S.

The homomorphism $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to j_*\overline{M}_U^{\mathrm{gp}}$ induces a homomorphism $\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{N}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ by pushout. Let $\overline{K}_Z$ be the $\overline{N}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on X_Z induced from $\overline{L}_s$ along this homomorphism.

Let $\mathscr{X}_U$ denote the dual graph of a geometric fiber of X over U and let $\mathscr{V}_U$ be its universal cover. Pulling back along the projection $\mathscr{X}_s \to \mathscr{X}_U$, we obtain an étale cover $\mathscr{V}_s$ of $\mathscr{X}_s$, which corresponds to an étale cover of X_s. By construction, this cover extends to an étale cover $\rho : V \to X$ of all of X.

We also use ρ to denote the restriction of ρ to the preimage of Z. The pullback $\rho^*\overline{K}_Z$ is trivial. Indeed, it suffices to trivialize $\rho^*\overline{K}_s$, and $\overline{K}_s$ has trivial monodromy around all loops in $\mathscr{V}_s$, by its construction and the assumption of bounded monodromy in $\overline{L}$. Then $\rho^*\overline{K}_Z$ extends trivially to an $\overline{N}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor $\overline{K}'$ on V and the action of deck transformations extends as well. By descent, we obtain an $\overline{N}_X$-torsor $\overline{K}$ on X extending $\overline{K}_Z$.

We may now define $\overline{L} = \overline{K} \times_{i_*\overline{K}_Z} i_*\overline{L}_Z$ where i is the inclusion of X_Z in X. This is a torsor under $\overline{N} \times_{i_*\overline{N}_{X_Z}} i_*\overline{M}_{X_Z}$, which is isomorphic to $\overline{M}_X$ by the canonical map. □

Suppose now that S is a strictly henselian valuation ring with special point ξ and generic point η. We have a commutative diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
\Gamma(X_\xi, \mathrm{B}M_{X_\xi}^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longleftarrow & \Gamma(X, \mathrm{B}M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longrightarrow & \Gamma(X_\eta, \mathrm{B}M_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \\
\downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\
\Gamma(X_\xi, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_\xi}^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longleftarrow & \Gamma(X, \mathrm{B}M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) & \longrightarrow & \Gamma(X_\eta, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_\eta}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \\
\downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\
\mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\xi) & \longleftarrow & \Gamma(S, \mathrm{B\,NS}(X/S)) & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\eta)
\end{array}$$

[5] The formula for $\mathrm{trop}(P)$ should be interpreted as a groupoid. Since $\mathcal{O}_X^* \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is injective, there is at most one isomorphism between any two objects of $\mathrm{trop}(P)$, so this groupoid is equivalent to a set.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Upon passage to the bounded monodromy subgroups and composing, we obtain

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(\xi) & \longleftarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(S) & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(\eta) \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \Gamma(X_\xi, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_\xi}^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \xleftarrow{\sim} & \Gamma(X, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & \Gamma(X_\eta, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_\eta})^\dagger \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ \mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\xi) & \xleftarrow{\sim} & (\mathrm{B\,NS}(X/S))(S) & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\eta) \end{array} \tag{4.14.4}$$

The isomorphism in the second row is Proposition 4.14.3 and we get the isomorphism $(\mathrm{B\,NS}(X/S))(S) \simeq \mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\xi)$ from the knowledge that $\mathrm{NS}(X/S)$ is an étale sheaf over S.

The vertical compositions in diagram (4.14.4) are canonically trivialized, as was discussed earlier. Proposition 4.14.2 implies that $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}_\xi)$ is the kernel of $\Gamma(\mathscr{X}_\xi, \mathrm{B}\overline{M}_{X_\xi}^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger \to \mathrm{B\,NS}(X_\xi)$ (and similarly over η) so we obtain the following commutative diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc} \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(\xi) & \longleftarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(S) & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S)(\eta) \\ \downarrow & \swarrow & & & \downarrow \\ \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}_\xi) & & \longrightarrow & & \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(X_\eta) \end{array} \tag{4.14.5}$$

We leave it to the reader to verify that the construction in the proof of Proposition 4.14.3 is the same as the one used in the proof of Proposition 3.8.2 so that the map $\mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}_\xi) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(X_\eta)$ displayed above is indeed the same as the one guaranteed by Proposition 3.8.2. The commutativity of the inner trapezoid gives the compatibility of the tropicalization map with generization.

Theorem 4.14.6. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S and let $\mathscr{X}$ be its tropicalization. Then there are exact sequences (in the étale topology)*

$$0 \to \mathbf{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0$$
$$0 \to \mathrm{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0$$

Proof. The second exact sequence is obtained from the first by dividing, term by term, by the terms of the following exact sequence:

$$0 \to \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_m \to \mathrm{B}\mathbf{G}_{\log} \to \mathrm{B}\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log} \to 0 \tag{4.14.6.1}$$

We have exact sequences

$$0 \to \mathcal{O}_X^* \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to 0 \quad (\text{on } X)$$

and

$$0 \to \mathsf{L} \to \mathsf{PL} \to \mathsf{V} \to 0 \qquad (\text{on } \mathscr{X}) \tag{4.14.6.2}$$

Rotating these sequences, pushing forward to S, and restricting to bounded monodromy, we get a commutative diagram of exact sequences (with $\rho_* \mathrm{B}\mathsf{PL}$ denoting the stack on S of

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

PL-torsors on $\mathscr{X}$):

$$\begin{array}{ccccccccc} 0 & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Pic}(X/S) & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) & \longrightarrow & \pi_*(\mathrm{B}\overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & 0 \\ & & \downarrow & & \downarrow & & \| & & \\ 0 & \longrightarrow & \mathrm{NS}(X/S) & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) & \longrightarrow & \rho_*(\mathsf{BPL})^\dagger & \longrightarrow & 0 \end{array}$$

The kernel of $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(X/S)$ therefore coincides with the kernel of the map $\mathbf{Pic}(X/S) \to \mathrm{NS}(X/S)$, which is $\mathbf{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$. Likewise, $\mathbf{Pic}(X/S)$ surjects onto $\mathrm{NS}(X/S)$ so $\mathbf{Log\,Pic}(X/S) \to \mathbf{Tro\,Pic}(X/S)$ is surjective as well. □

4.15 Logarithmic abelian variety structure

In this subsection, we explain how the logarithmic Jacobian carries the structure of a log abelian variety, in the sense of [KKN15]. For the convenience of the reader, we recall briefly the necessary definitions. For details and proofs, we refer the reader to [KKN15]. We try to keep the notation of [KKN15] as much as possible, but some changes will be necessary in order to avoid conflicts with notation already introduced here. We fix a base logarithmic scheme S, and form the site fs/S, whose objects are fine and saturated log schemes over S and whose coverings are strict étale surjections.

Let G be a semiabelian group scheme, that is, an extension

$$1 \to T \to G \to A \to 1 \tag{4.15.1}$$

of an abelian variety A by a torus $T = \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{Z}[H] = \underline{\mathrm{Hom}}(H, \mathbf{G}_m)$. Here, H is a sheaf of lattices over fs/S. Just as $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ extends $\mathbf{G}_m$, there is a sheaf $T^{\log} = \mathbf{G}_{\log} \otimes_{\mathbf{G}_m} T$ extending T that can be defined on fs/S by the formula

$$T^{\log}(S') = \mathrm{Hom}(H, M_{S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}). \tag{4.15.2}$$

Equivalently, $T^{\log} = \underline{\mathrm{Hom}}(H, \mathbf{G}_{\log})$, where we regard H as a sheaf on fs/S, and $\underline{\mathrm{Hom}}$ denotes the sheaf of homomorphisms. There is an evident inclusion $T \to T^{\log}$ induced from $\mathbf{G}_m \to \mathbf{G}_{\log}$, and pushing out $T \to G$ along this map, we obtain an exact sequence

$$1 \to T^{\log} \to G^{\log} \to A \to 1 \tag{4.15.3}$$

where $G^{\log} = T^{\log} \oplus_T G$.

DEFINITION 4.15.4 [KKN08b, Definition 2.2]. A *log 1-motif* is a map $K \to G^{\log}$, where G is a semiabelian group scheme and K is sheaf of locally free abelian groups of finite rank on fs/S.

The map $K \to G^{\log}$ naturally defines a subsheaf $G^{\log}_{(K)} \subset G^{\log}$ as follows. The composed map from K to the quotient $G^{\log}/G \cong T^{\log}/T = \overline{T}^{\log}$ determines a pairing $\langle , \rangle : H \times K \to \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$, and a subsheaf $\overline{T}^{\log}_{(K)}$, determined by the formula

$$\overline{T}^{\log}_{(K)}(S') = \left\{ \phi \in \overline{T}^{\log}(S') \,\middle|\, \begin{array}{l} \forall \text{ geometric points } s \in S', x \in H_s, \\ \exists y, y' \in K \text{ s.t } \langle x, y \rangle \le \phi(x) \le \langle x, y' \rangle \end{array} \right\}. \tag{4.15.5}$$

We thus obtain $G^{\log}_{(K)}$ by simply pulling back $\overline{T}^{\log}_{(K)}$ under the map $G \to \overline{T}^{\log}$. A log 1-motif defines an *abelian variety with constant degeneration*, by assigning to $K \to G^{\log}$ the quotient sheaf $G^{\log}_{(K)}/K$.

DEFINITION 4.15.6 [KKN08a, Definition 4.1]. A *log abelian variety* is a sheaf $\mathcal{A}$ on fs/S such that all of the following properties hold.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

(1) For each geometric point $s \in S$, the pullback of $\mathcal{A}$ to fs/s is a log abelian variety with constant degeneration.
(2) Étale-locally on S, there is an exact sequence

$$0 \to G \to \mathcal{A} \to \overline{T}^{\log}_{(K)}/K \to 0 \tag{4.15.6.1}$$

for some semiabelian variety G over S, some bilinear form $H \times K \to \Gamma(S, \overline{M}^{\text{gp}}_S)$, and $\overline{T}^{\log} = \underline{\text{Hom}}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$.
(3) Let $\overline{K}$ denote the image of K in $\underline{\text{Hom}}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ and $\overline{H}$ the image of H in $\underline{\text{Hom}}(K, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$. For each geometric point $s \in S$, there exists a map $\phi : \overline{K}_s \to \overline{H}_s$ with finite cokernel such that $\langle \phi(y), z\rangle = \langle y, \phi(z)\rangle$ for all $y, z \in \overline{K}_s$, and $\langle \phi(y), y\rangle \in \overline{M}_{S,s}$.
(4) The diagonal $\mathcal{A} \to \mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{A}$ is representable by finite morphisms.

We are now ready to indicate how the logarithmic Jacobian fits into this context.

Theorem 4.15.7. *Let X be a proper, vertical logarithmic curve over S. Then* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ *is a logarithmic abelian variety in the sense of Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama [KKN08a].*

Proof. We verify the conditions of Definition 4.15.6.

Given a family of logarithmic curves $X \to S$, with dual graph $\mathscr{X}$, we obtain a sheaf of lattices $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. We set $H = K = H_1(\mathscr{X})$ for the lattices appearing in the definition above, and take $\langle , \rangle$ to be the intersection pairing. We let $G = \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X)$ denote the multidegree-0 part of $\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$.

The third condition in the definition is immediate in our context. The two lattices H and K are $H_1(\mathscr{X})$, and we may take $\phi = \text{id}$. For any $y \in H_1(\mathscr{X}_s)$, the pairing $\langle y, y\rangle$ is a sum of elements of $\overline{M}_{S,s}$ by Definition 3.3.1, and therefore is in $\overline{M}_{S,s}$.

The last condition is exactly Theorem 4.12.1.

The first and second condition follow from Corollary 4.6.3 and the exact sequence of Theorem 4.9.4 respectively, once we observe the following lemma.

Lemma 4.15.8. *For $K = H_1(\mathscr{X})$, the subsheaf $\overline{T}^{\log}_{(K)}$ coincides with the subsheaf of elements with bounded monodromy $(\overline{T}^{\log})^\dagger$ in $\overline{T}^{\log}$.*

Proof. Since both the bounded monodromy condition and the condition defining $\overline{T}^{\log}_{(Y)}$ are defined pointwise, we may check that the two groups are the same on a logarithmic scheme s whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field. If $\phi : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\text{gp}}$ has bounded monodromy then, by definition, there are integers m and n such that $m\langle x, x\rangle \le \phi(x) \le n\langle x, x\rangle$. Thus, $\phi \in \overline{T}^{\log}_{(Y)}$ as it verifies the definition with $y = mx, y' = nx$.

For the converse, suppose that $\phi : H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}^{\text{gp}}_s$ and, for every $x \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, there are $y, y' \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$ such that $\langle x, y\rangle \le \phi(x) \le \langle x, y'\rangle$. For any $y \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, we have $\langle x, y\rangle \le n\langle x, x\rangle$ for some positive integer n. Indeed, we may take n to be the maximum of the coefficients of y as a linear combination of edges of $\mathscr{X}$. We likewise have $\langle x, y'\rangle \ge -m\langle x, x\rangle$ for some positive integer m, and therefore $-m\langle x, x\rangle \le \phi(x) \le n\langle x, x\rangle$, as required. ☐

This concludes the proof of Theorem 4.15.7. ☐

4.16 Prorepresentability

The logarithmic Picard group and logarithmic Jacobian cannot be represented by schemes, or even by algebraic stacks, with logarithmic structures. This follows from the nonrepresentability of the logarithmic multiplicative group, which was proved in Proposition 2.2.7.2. We have

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

already seen in § 4.11 that both are nearly representable in the sense that they have logarithmically smooth covers by logarithmic schemes. In this subsection we will consider another near-representability property.

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be the tropicalization of a logarithmic curve X over S. Theorem 4.9.4 shows that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is a torsor under the algebraic group $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$ over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$, and Theorem 4.14.6 shows that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is a $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$-torsor over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$. Therefore, the nonrepresentability of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ can be attributed to the nonrepresentability of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$. However, we saw in § 3.9 that $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is prorepresentable. We might therefore reasonably expect $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ to be similarly prorepresentable.

We saw in Proposition 3.9.1 that $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$ is, locally in S, prorepresentable by a collection of submonoids of $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$. Each of these submonoids represents a functor on logarithmic schemes that can be represented by an algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure (see [CCUW20, § 6] for further details). Therefore, we can think of $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ as ind-representable on logarithmic schemes by algebraic stacks with logarithmic structure. Since $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is a quotient of $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger$ by $H_1(\mathscr{X})$, we conclude that $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is, locally in S, the quotient of an ind-algebraic stack with logarithmic structure by $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. The same applies to $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^d(\mathscr{X}/S)$ for all d, since it is a torsor under $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}^0(\mathscr{X}/S) = \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$.

Proposition 4.16.1. $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *is, locally in* S*, the quotient of an ind-algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure by the action of* $H_1(\mathscr{X})$*.*

Proof. $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is a torsor over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ under the algebraic group $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$. □

For a moduli problem F on logarithmic schemes, one defines a minimal logarithmic structure on an S-point of F in such a way that when F is representable, minimality corresponds to strictness of the morphism $S \to F$. We introduce a similar notion that corresponds to strictness *at the level of associated groups*.

Definition 4.16.2. Let S be a logarithmic scheme and let F be a covariant functor valued in sets on logarithmic structures over M_S such that $F(M_S)$ has one element. We say that a logarithmic structure N over M_S and an object $\xi \in F(N)$ is *pseudominimal* if, for every $\eta \in F(P)$, there is a unique morphism $u : N^{\mathrm{gp}} \to P^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and $\xi' \in F(u^{-1}P \cap N)$ that is sent to ξ under $u^{-1}P \cap N \to N$ and is sent to η under $u^{-1}P \cap N \to P$.

If F is a presheaf on logarithmic schemes then we say that $\xi \in F(T)$ is *pseudominimal* if ξ is pseudominimal when F is regarded as a functor on logarithmic structures over M_T.

Note that if $\xi_1 \in F(N_1)$ and $\xi_2 \in F(N_2)$ are both pseudominimal then there is a canonical isomorphism $N_1^{\mathrm{gp}} \simeq N_2^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

Proposition 4.16.3. *With notation as in Definition 4.16.2, if pseudominimal elements exist then the collection of pseudominimal objects of* F *prorepresents* F*.*

Proof. Let $G(P) = \varinjlim_{(N,\xi)} \operatorname{Hom}(N, P)$ with the colimit taken over all pseudominimal (N, ξ). There is a canonical morphism $G \to F$ that we want to show is an isomorphism. It is surjective by the existence of pseudominimal objects. Now suppose that $\xi_1 \in F(N_1)$ and $\xi_2 \in F(N_2)$ are pseudominimal objects projecting to the same $\eta \in F(P)$. By definition of pseudominimality, there exist a unique morphism $u : N_1^{\mathrm{gp}} \to N_2^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and an object $\xi' \in F(u^{-1}N_2 \cap N_1)$ projecting to both ξ_1 and ξ_2 along the canonical maps to N_1 and N_2. It is immediate that ξ' is pseudominimal,

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

which implies that the pseudominimal objects are cofiltered. Moreover, the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} u^{-1}N_2 \cap N_1 & \longrightarrow & N_1 \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ N_2 & \longrightarrow & P \end{array} \tag{4.16.3.1}$$

commutes, so the homomorphisms $N_1 \to P$ and $N_2 \to P$ represent the same element of $G(P)$. This demonstrates the injectivity of $G \to F$ and completes the proof. □

Proposition 4.16.4. *A T-point of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ over $f : T \to S$ is pseudominimal if and only if the canonical map $f^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} + H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \overline{M}_T^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is a bijection.*

Proof. Since $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S) \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$ is strict, a T-point of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is pseudominimal if and only if the induced T-point of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(X/S)$ is pseudominimal. The proposition therefore follows from Proposition 3.9.1. □

Example 4.16.5. The group $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ is not prorepresentable, because it lacks pseudominimal objects. For simplicity we will work with $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$ instead. Indeed, consider a logarithmic structure over a point with characteristic monoid $\overline{M} = \mathbf{N}e_1 + \mathbf{N}e_2$. Then $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(S) = \mathbf{Z}e_1 + \mathbf{Z}e_2$. Consider the element $e_1 - e_2$. Any pseudominimal object $(\overline{N}, \xi)$ must have $\overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}} = \mathbf{Z}$. But if $u : \mathbf{Z} \to \overline{M}$ is a homomorphism taking 1 to $e_1 - e_2$ then $u^{-1}\overline{M} = \{0\}$, and then there is no element of $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(0) = 0$ inducing $e_1 - e_2$ via a homomorphism to $\overline{M}$.

On the other hand, we have already seen that the bounded monodromy subfunctors $\operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger \subset \operatorname{Hom}(H, \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})$ associated to a positive definite quadratic form on H do admit pseudominimal objects. For a concrete example, we work over a base monoid containing a nonzero element δ and consider $H = \mathbf{Z}$ with the quadratic form ℓ that has $\ell(1) = \delta$. Let $\overline{N}$ be a submonoid of $\overline{M} \times H$ that contains $(n\delta, 1)$ and $(n\delta, -1)$ for some positive integer n, and let $\xi \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}^\dagger(H) = \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}} \times \mathbf{Z}$ be the element $(0, 1)$. We will check that $(\overline{N}, \xi)$ is pseudominimal relative to any element of $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}^\dagger(\overline{M})$. Indeed, suppose that $\eta \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}^\dagger(\overline{P}) \subset \overline{P}^{\mathrm{gp}}$. Then there is a positive integer m such that $-m\delta \le \eta \le m\delta$, so $\overline{P}$ contains both $\eta + m\delta$ and $m\delta - \eta$; for simplicity we choose $m \ge n$. Therefore, the preimage of $\overline{P}$ under the natural homomorphism $u : \overline{N}^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \overline{P}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ contains $(m\delta, 1)$ and $(m\delta, -1)$. Hence $(0, 1)$ lies in the associated group of $u^{-1}\overline{P} \cap \overline{N}$, so we can find $\xi' = (0, 1) \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(u^{-1}\overline{P} \cap \overline{N})$ lifting both $\xi \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(\overline{N})$ and $\eta \in \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}(\overline{P})$.

4.17 Schematic models

We show that the combinatorics of the tropical Picard group can be used to construct toroidal compactifications of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^d(X/S)$. This section is inspired directly by Kajiwara, Kato, and Nakayama [Kaj93, KKN15] and is, for the most part, only a tropical reinterpretation of their results.

Suppose that X is a logarithmic curve over a logarithmic scheme S with tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$. For simplicity, we assume that S is atomic, or at least that it has a morphism to σ for some rational polyhedral cone σ, dual to $\overline{M}$, and that $\mathscr{X}$ is pulled back from a tropical curve $\mathscr{Y}$ over σ (we abuse notation here and do not distinguish notationally between σ and its Artin cone). Then $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ is pulled back from $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{Y})$. A subdivision $\mathscr{Z}$ of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{Y})$ induces a subdivision of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ and a subdivision $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{Z}}$ of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ by pullback. Since subdivisions are proper and $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is proper, the subdivision, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{Z}}$, is proper as well.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Suppose now that $\mathscr{X}$ is actually representable by a cone space in the sense of [CCUW20]. Then $\mathscr{X} \times_\sigma S$ is representable by an algebraic stack over S with a logarithmic structure. By Theorem 4.14.6, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ is a torsor over $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ under the group scheme $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S)$. Therefore, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ is also a torsor over $\mathscr{X}_S$ under the same group scheme. This implies that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ is representable by an algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure.

LEMMA 4.17.1. *Let L be a logarithmic line bundle on a proper, vertical logarithmic curve X over S. Assume that the logarithmic structure of S is pseudominimal. Then the automorphism group of L, fixing the underlying schemes of X and S and the minimal logarithmic structure of X, is $\Gamma(S, M_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$.*

Proof. Let N_S and N_X be the minimal logarithmic structures on X and on S, respectively, associated with the curve X over S. Then $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is isomorphic to the direct sum $\overline{N}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} + H_1(\mathscr{X})$, where $\mathscr{X}$ is the tropicalization of X over S. We choose the splitting as follows: L induces $\bar{\lambda} \in H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{PL}) = \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})/\partial\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X})$. Locally in S, we choose a lift of $\bar{\lambda}$ to $\lambda \in \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Then we identify $H_1(\mathscr{X})$ with its image in $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ under λ.

Now consider an automorphism of L as in the statement of the lemma. This comprises an automorphism of ϕ of M_S and an isomorphism $L \simeq \phi_* L$. Since L and $\phi_* L$ are isomorphic, the homomorphisms λ and $\phi\lambda$ must coincide modulo $\partial\mathsf{E}(\mathscr{X})$. That is, $\phi\lambda = \lambda + \sum a_i \partial(e_i)$. In particular, for each $\gamma \in H_1(\mathscr{X})$, we must therefore have

$$\phi\lambda(\gamma) = \gamma + \sum_{e_i \in \gamma} a_i \ell(e_i) \tag{4.17.1.1}$$

where the sum is taken over the constituent edges of γ. If any $a_i < 0$ then $\phi^k(\gamma)$ cannot lie in $\overline{M}_S$ for $k \gg 0$. Similarly, if any $a_i > 0$ then $\phi^k(\gamma)$ will not lie in $\overline{M}_S$ for $k \ll 0$. Therefore, $a_i = 0$ for all i and ϕ acts as the identity on $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

The automorphism ϕ of M_S is therefore determined uniquely by a homomorphism $\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \mathcal{O}_S^*$. This homomorphism must vanish on $\overline{N}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \subset \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$, so it descends to a homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathcal{O}_S^*$. Writing A for the automorphism group in the statement of the lemma, this gives us an exact sequence

$$0 \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to A \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathcal{O}_S^*) \tag{4.17.1.2}$$

The M_X^{gp} on the left represents the automorphisms of L when the logarithmic structure of S is held fixed. We wish to show that only the zero homomorphism $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathcal{O}_S^*$ lifts to A.

Consider the sheaf $\tilde{A}$ on X whose sections over an étale $U \to X$ consist of an automorphism ϕ of $\pi^* M_S|_U$ that fixes the minimal logarithmic structure of X and the characteristic monoid of $\pi^* M_S|_U$ and an isomorphism between $L|_U$ and $\phi_* L|_U$. Since logarithmic line bundles are locally trivial, an isomorphism between $L|_U$ and $\phi_* L|_U$ always exists locally in X and there is therefore an exact sequence of sheaves on X:

$$0 \to M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \tilde{A} \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathcal{O}_X^*) \to 0$$

Pushing forward to S, we get the following extension of (4.17.1.2):

$$0 \to \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to A \to \operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathcal{O}_S^*) \to \mathrm{R}^1 \pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \tag{4.17.1.3}$$

The map $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathcal{O}_S^*) \to \mathrm{R}^1\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}$ sends a homomorphism ϕ to the multidegree-0 line bundle on X obtained by gluing using ϕ around the loops of $\mathscr{X}$. It is, in other words, the inclusion of the torus part of $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X)$ in $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X)$ and, in particular, is injective. It follows that $\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to A$ is bijective. By Lemma 4.6.1, $\pi_* M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} = M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and the lemma is proved. □

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Corollary 4.17.2. *Let* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ *be a subdivision of* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)$ *that is representable by an algebraic stack with a logarithmic structure. Then* $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ *is representable by an algebraic space with a logarithmic structure.*

Proof. Since objects of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ are pseudominimal, Lemma 4.17.1 shows that objects of $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ have no nontrivial automorphisms. Therefore, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}(X/S)_{\mathscr{X}}$ is a sheaf, and hence an algebraic space. □

4.18 Unintegrable torsors

We will show that a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor on a logarithmic curve that deforms to all infinitesimal orders does not necessarily integrate to a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor over a complete noetherian local ring. Such objects are excluded from the logarithmic Picard group by the bounded monodromy condition of Definition 3.5.5, and this subsection is meant to explain the necessity of that condition.

In this subsection we can take cohomology either in the Zariski topology or the étale topology.

Let P be a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor on a logarithmic scheme X. By the projection $\mathbf{G}_{\log} \to \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$, this induces a $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$-torsor $\overline{P}$ over X. We note that there is an exact sequence

$$H^1(X, M_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \overline{M}_X^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^2(X, \mathcal{O}_X^*)$$

As $H^2(X, \mathcal{O}_X^*)$ vanishes for a curve over an algebraically closed field (or, more generally, over an artinian local ring with algebraically closed residue field), every $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$-torsor on such a curve lifts to a $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor. To prove the existence of an unintegrable $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsor, it will therefore suffice to give an example of an unintegrable $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$-torsor on a family of logarithmic curves over a complete noetherian local ring with algebraically closed residue field.

Let $S = \operatorname{Spec} \mathbf{C}[[t]]$ and let X be a family of curves with smooth total space such that the general fiber is smooth and connected, but the special fiber has two irreducible components, joined to each other at two ordinary double points, but is otherwise smooth. This is essentially the simplest example where étale cohomology with nontorsion coefficients does not commute with base change [SGA4(3), § 2]. In this example, cohomology in the Zariski topology also fails to commute with base change.

Let M_S be the divisorial logarithmic structure on S and let M'_S be an extension of M_S with $\overline{M}'_S = \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}} \times \mathbf{Z}$. One may simply take $\overline{M}'_S = \overline{M}_S \times \mathbf{N}$, but it will be convenient later to have a valuative example; for this one can take a logarithmic structure with characteristic monoid $\mathbf{N}$ on the generic point of S and give S the logarithmic structure obtained by pushforward. It is convenient to write $S' = (S, M'_S)$, so that $M'_S = M_{S'}$. If M_X is the divisorial logarithmic structure on X then let $X' = (X, M'_X)$ be the pullback of $(X, M_X) \to (S, M_S)$ along $S' \to (S, M_S)$. We construct a $\overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$-torsor on the special fiber X'_0 that lifts to all finite orders (this is automatic, by infinitesimal invariance of the étale site) but not to X'.

We compute $H^1(X, \overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ by means of the exact sequence

$$H^0(X, \overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_{S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$$

As $\overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ is concentrated in dimension 0 on X, the last term in the sequence vanishes. The group $H^1(X, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_{S'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$ vanishes because X is normal (see [SGA4(3), § 2]). Hence $H^1(X, \overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = 0$.

On the other hand, in the exact sequence

$$H^0(X_0, \overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \xrightarrow{\partial} H^1(X_0, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_{S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X_0, \overline{M}_{X'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X_0, \overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}})$$

we still have $H^1(X_0, \overline{M}_{X'/S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = 0$, for the same reason, but

$$H^1(X_0, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_{S'}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = H^1(X_0, \mathbf{Z}^2) \simeq \mathbf{Z}^2$$

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

since the fundamental group of X_0 is $\mathbf{Z}$ in the Zariski topology. (In the étale topology, it is the nontorsion part of the fundamental group that is $\mathbf{Z}$.)

The sheaf $\overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'/S'}$ is a skyscraper $\mathbf{Z}$, concentrated at the nodes of X_0. Therefore, $H^0(X_0, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'/S'}) = \mathbf{Z}^2$. The map ∂ is the intersection pairing and one can verify directly that its rank is 1. Alternatively, one may observe that it is induced by pushout from the intersection pairing on X, which certainly has rank at most 1 because $H^1(X_0, \pi^{-1}\overline{M}_S) \simeq \mathbf{Z}$. In any case, there is a nonzero element in $H^1(X_0, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'})$ (and one can verify that this group is free of rank 1).

This gives a formal collection of elements of $H^1(X_n, M^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'})$, where X_n is the reduction of X modulo t^{n+1}, for every $n \geq 0$, whose image in $H^1(X_n, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'})$ is nonzero. However, $H^1(X, \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_{X'}) = 0$, so this formal collection cannot be integrated.

Proposition 4.18.1. *Let X' and S' be as above and let Z be either the category fibered in groupoids on $\mathbf{LogSch}/S'$ whose value is the groupoid of $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$-torsors on X'_T, or the sheaf of isomorphism classes of such. Then Z has no logarithmically smooth cover by a logarithmic scheme.*

Proof. Suppose that U is a logarithmic scheme and $U \to Z$ is a logarithmically smooth cover. Choose S' as in the discussion preceding the statement of the proposition, with algebraically closed residue field. Since the logarithmic structure of S'_0 is valuative, the map $S'_0 \to Z$ lifts to U. Then the formal family of points $S'_n \to Z$ constructed above lifts to $S'_n \to U$ by the infinitesimal criterion for logarithmic smoothness. Since U is a logarithmic scheme, this family can be integrated to a map $S' \to U$, and therefore the maps $S'_n \to Z$ can be integrated to $S' \to Z$. We have just seen no such integration exists. □

5. Examples

We calculate some examples of $\mathrm{LogPic}(X/S)$, over a base S whose underlying scheme is the spectrum of an algebraically closed field k. We use the quotient presentation of Corollary 4.6.3, which requires an explicit understanding of $H^1(X^\nu, \mathbf{G}_{\log})$ and the map $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H^1(X^\nu, \mathbf{G}_{\log})$.

5.1 The Tate curve

Let $Y \to \operatorname{Spec} k[[t]]$ be a family of curves whose generic fiber Y_η is a smooth curve of genus 1 and whose special fiber X consists of n rational curves arranged in a circle. We give $\operatorname{Spec} k[[t]]$ its divisorial logarithmic structure and we take S to be the closed point of $\operatorname{Spec} k[[t]]$, with the logarithmic structure induced by restriction.

Let $\mathscr{X}$ be the tropicalization of X. This is a graph with n vertices in a circle, and we have $H_0(\mathscr{X}) = \mathbf{Z}$ and $H_1(\mathscr{X}) = \mathbf{Z}$. The intersection pairing $\mathbf{Z} \times \mathbf{Z} \to \overline{M}^{\mathrm{gp}}_S$ sends (a, b) to $ab\delta$ where δ is the sum of the lengths of the edges of $\mathscr{X}$. Corollary 3.4.8 then gives exact sequences:

$$0 \to \mathbf{Z} \xrightarrow{\delta} \overline{\mathbf{G}}^{\dagger}_{\log} \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to 0 \tag{5.1.1}$$

$$0 \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to \operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Pic}(\mathscr{X}/S) \to \mathbf{Z} \to 0 \tag{5.1.2}$$

That is, $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) = \overline{\mathbf{G}}^{\dagger}_{\log}/\mathbf{Z}\delta$. In particular, if $\overline{M}_T = \mathbf{R}_{\geq 0}$ then the T-points of $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S)$ may be identified with $\mathbf{R}/\mathbf{Z}\delta$. By Theorem 4.14.6, $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is an extension of ${\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}}^{\dagger}/\mathbf{Z}\delta$ by $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \simeq \mathbf{G}_m$.

In order to understand this extension more explicitly, we will use the quotient presentation of Corollary 4.6.3. Recall from (4.7.5) that we may identify $H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]}$ with

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

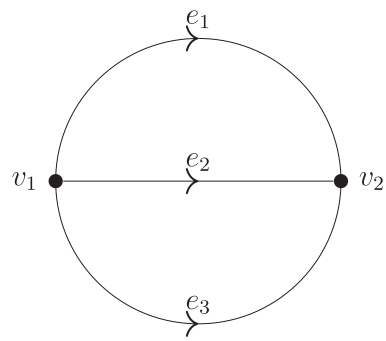


Figure 7. A tropical curve of genus 2.

$\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_{\log})$. Therefore, Corollary 4.6.3 gives us the following exact sequence:

$$0 \to H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_{\log})^\dagger \to \mathrm{Log\,Pic}^0(X/S) \to 0 \tag{5.1.3}$$

The pairing $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \times H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \mathbf{G}_{\log}$ lifts the intersection pairing on $\mathscr{X}$, valued in $\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}$. Substituting $H_1(\mathscr{X}) = \mathbf{Z}$, we obtain $\mathrm{Log\,Pic}^0(X/S) = \mathbf{G}_{\log}^\dagger/\mathbf{Z}\tilde{\delta}$ where $\mathbf{G}_{\log}^\dagger$ denotes the subfunctor of $\mathbf{G}_{\log}$ that is bounded by δ, and $\tilde{\delta}$ is a lift of δ to M_S.

The following is the tropicalization sequence from Theorem 4.14.6:

$$0 \to \mathbf{G}_m \to \mathbf{G}_{\log}^\dagger/\mathbf{Z}\tilde{\delta} \to \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}^\dagger/\mathbf{Z}\delta \to 0 \tag{5.1.4}$$

The element $\tilde{\delta} \in \mathbf{G}_{\log}$ can be understood as a 'logarithmic period', in the following sense. The map $d\log : M_X^{\mathrm{gp}} \to \Omega_{X/S}^{\log}$ factors through $M_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ and therefore gives us a logarithmic differential ϕ on X. We wish to compute $\int_\gamma \phi$ where γ is a basis for $H_1(\mathscr{X})$, without attempting to introduce any general theory of integration.

Let $\tilde{X}$ be the 'universal cover' of X, whose tropicalization $\tilde{\mathscr{X}}$ has vertices indexed by the integers, with consecutive vertices connected by an edge. We can recognize $\tilde{X}$ as a subdivision of $\mathbf{G}_{\log}^\dagger$, and we have $X = \tilde{X}/H_1(\mathscr{X}) = \tilde{X}/\mathbf{Z}\gamma$.

Locally in X, there is no obstruction to lifting ϕ to $M_{\tilde{X}}^{\mathrm{gp}}$, so there is a global section Φ of $M_{\tilde{X}}^{\mathrm{gp}}$ lifting ϕ. Then $\Phi(\gamma.x) - \Phi(x)$ is a function of $x \in \tilde{X}$ valued in $\pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$. It is therefore constant and represents the coboundary of γ in $H^1(X, \pi^* M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}) = M_S^{\mathrm{gp}}$.

5.2 A curve of genus 2

Let X consist of two rational components joined along three nodes. The tropicalization $\mathscr{X}$ has two vertices, v_1 and v_2, and three edges, e_1, e_2, and e_3, which we choose to orient from v_1 to v_2, as shown in Figure 7. We write δ_i for the length of e_i in $\overline{M}_S$. The differences $e_1 - e_2$ and $e_2 - e_3$ form a basis for $H_1(\mathscr{X})$. In this basis, the matrix of the intersection pairing is

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} \delta_1 + \delta_2 & -\delta_2 \\ -\delta_2 & \delta_2 + \delta_3 \end{pmatrix}. \tag{5.2.1}$$

The presentation $\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(X/S) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger / H_1(\mathscr{X})$ becomes

$$\mathrm{Tro\,Jac}(X/S) = (\overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log} \times \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log})^\dagger / A\mathbf{Z}^2. \tag{5.2.2}$$

In particular, the real points are $\mathbf{R}^2/A\mathbf{Z}^2 \simeq S^1 \times S^1$.

The commutative diagram in (3.4.1) gives a morphism

$$H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V}) \to \mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X}) \subset H^1(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{L}). \tag{5.2.3}$$

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

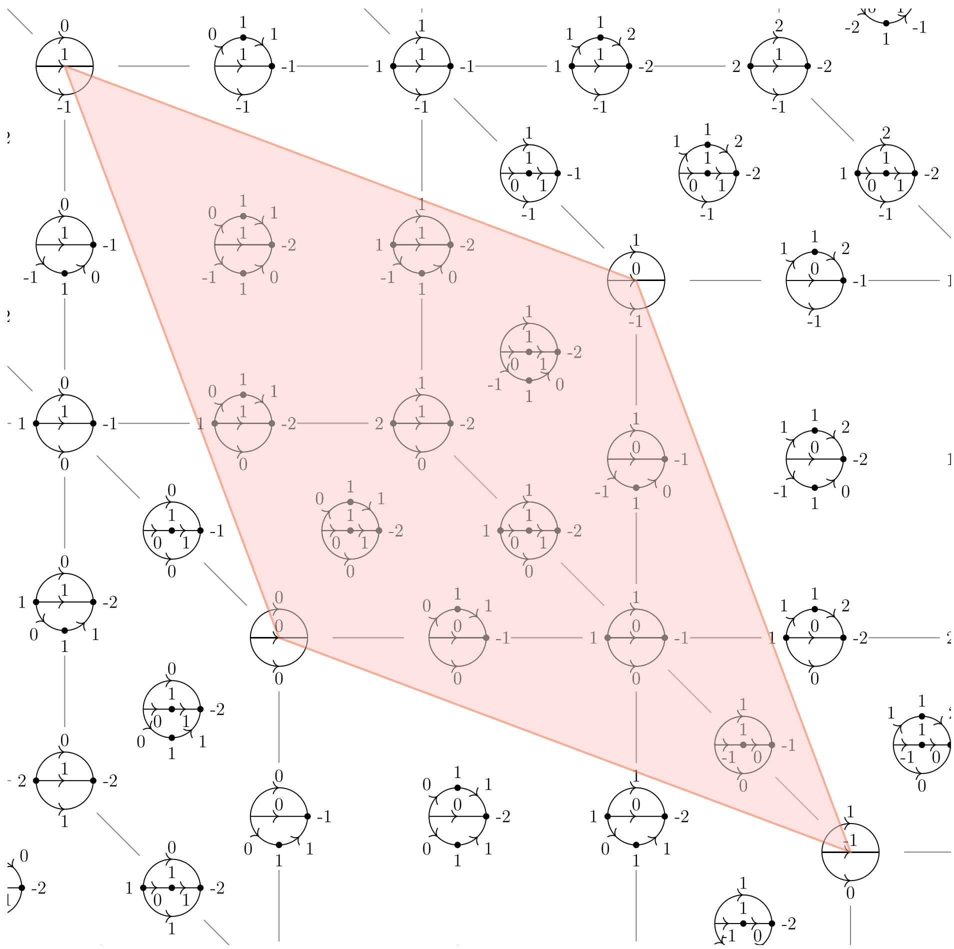


FIGURE 8. A fundamental domain for the quotient $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{R})/\partial H_1(\mathscr{X})$ and the subdivision, under an isomorphism to $\mathrm{Tro\,Pic}^2(\mathscr{X})$, into regions parameterizing balanced tropical divisors on quasistable models of $\mathscr{X}$.

In concrete terms, this sends an integer linear combination of vertices D on $\mathscr{X}$ to the torsor of piecewise linear functions on $\mathscr{X}$ that are linear along the edges of $\mathscr{X}$ and whose failure of linearity at each vertex v of $\mathscr{X}$ is $D(v)$. We denote this torsor $\mathsf{L}(D)$.

The exact sequence in the first row of (3.4.1) shows that lifts of $\mathsf{L}(D)$ to $H^1(\mathscr{X}, \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$ correspond to the trivializations of the induced H-torsor $\mathsf{H}(D)$. This torsor is the sheaf of assignments of integers to the vertices of $\mathscr{X}$ such that the sum of outgoing slopes at each vertex v is $D(v)$.

The same reasoning applies equally well to any subdivision $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$. Since $\mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{Y}) = \mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ and $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{Y}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$, giving $D \in H^0(\mathscr{Y}, \mathsf{V})$ and a trivialization of $\mathsf{H}(D)$ will also produce points in $\mathrm{Tro\,Pic}(\mathscr{X})$ and $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}})$. Figure 8 shows a piece of $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{R})$ with horizontal coordinate $e_1 - e_2$ and vertical coordinate $e_2 - e_3$. For $D \in H^0(\mathscr{X}, \mathsf{V})$ and trivialization of $\mathsf{H}(D)$ chosen according to the following rules, we have plotted a picture of those data at the corresponding position in $\mathrm{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{R})$.

(1) D is supported on a quasistable model $\mathscr{Y}$ of $\mathscr{X}$, meaning that each edge of $\mathscr{X}$ is subdivided at most once.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

(2) If $v \in \mathscr{Y}$ is a point of subdivision of $\mathscr{X}$ then $D(v) = 1$.
(3) We have $0 \leq D(v_1) \leq 2$ and $-2 \leq D(v_2) \leq 0$.

In the picture, each vertex v is labeled by $D(v)$ unless $D(v) = 0$ and each edge is labeled by the slope it has been assigned in a choice of trivialization of $\mathsf{H}(D)$. The shaded parallelogram is the fundamental domain

$$\{x\partial(e_1 - e_2) + y\partial(e_2 - e_3) \,|\, 0 \leq x \leq 1 \text{ and } 0 \leq y \leq 1\} \tag{5.2.4}$$

for the quotient by $\partial H_1(\mathscr{X})$.

This subdivision is suggested by Caporaso's compactification of $\operatorname{Pic}^2(X)$. We originally computed it with the help of Margarida Melo, Martin Ulirsch, and Filippo Viviani. The same example also appears in [ABKS14, Figure 1] and [AP20, Figure 4].

5.3 Nonmaximal degeneracy

Finally, let us look at an example which is not maximally degenerate. Suppose X is the union of two curves Y_1 and Y_2, glued along two points p_1, p_2, with p_i in the first copy glued to p_i in the second copy. The dual graph $\mathscr{X}$ of X is again topologically a circle, with two vertices, v_1 and v_2, and two edges, e_1 and e_2, with lengths δ_1 and δ_2. As in § 5.1, we find that $\operatorname{Tro}\operatorname{Jac}(\mathscr{X}/S) = \overline{\mathbf{G}}_{\log}^{\dagger}/\mathbf{Z}(\delta_1 + \delta_2)$ and $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is an extension of this torus by the algebraic Jacobian.

To compute $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$, we use the quotient presentation from Corollary 4.6.3. Equation (4.7.5) presents $H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$ as an extension of $H^1(X^\nu, \mathbf{G}_m) = \operatorname{Pic}(Y_1) \times \operatorname{Pic}(Y_2)$ by $\operatorname{Hom}(H_1(\mathscr{X}), \mathbf{G}_{\log})$:

$$0 \to \mathbf{G}_{\log}^{\dagger} \to H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{\dagger} \to \operatorname{Pic}^0(Y_1) \times \operatorname{Pic}^0(Y_2) \to 0 \tag{5.3.1}$$

Then Corollary 4.6.3 says that $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is the quotient of $H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{\dagger}$ by $H_1(\mathscr{X})$.

In general, the composition

$$H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log}) \to H^1(X^\nu, \mathbf{G}_m) = \operatorname{Pic}^0(Y_1) \times \operatorname{Pic}^0(Y_2) \tag{5.3.2}$$

is nonzero. Indeed, recall that the map $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$ is induced from the composition

$$H_1(\mathscr{X}) \subset H^0(X, \overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}}) \to H^1(X, \pi^*\overline{M}_S^{\mathrm{gp}}), \tag{5.3.3}$$

which was itself induced from the short exact sequence (4.6.2.1). Identifying $H^0(X, \overline{M}_{X/S}^{\mathrm{gp}}) = \mathbf{Z}^E$, where E is the set of edges of $\mathscr{X}$, the basis element e corresponding to the node p is sent to $(\mathcal{O}_{Y_1}(p), \mathcal{O}_{Y_2}(-p))$. Therefore, the basis $e_1 - e_2$ of $H_1(\mathscr{X})$ is sent to $(\mathcal{O}_{Y_1}(p_1 - p_2)$, $\mathcal{O}_{Y_2}(-p_1 + p_2))$.

If Y_1 or Y_2 has positive genus, the map $H_1(\mathscr{X}) \to \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X)$ is therefore nonzero, and will even be injective if $\mathcal{O}_{Y_i}(p_1 - p_2)$ is not a torsion point of the Jacobians of both curves. This shows that the surjection $H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})^{[0]\dagger} \to \operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X^\nu/S)$ does not factor through $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$, even though its restriction to $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \subset H^1(X, \pi^*\mathbf{G}_{\log})$ does factor through its image in $\operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$. Indeed, the map $\operatorname{Pic}^{[0]}(X/S) \to \operatorname{Log}\operatorname{Pic}^0(X/S)$ is injective by Theorem 4.14.6.

Acknowledgements

This work benefited from the suggestions, corrections, and objections of Dan Abramovich, Sebastian Casalaina-Martin, William D. Gillam, David Holmes, Dhruv Ranganathan, Martin Ulirsch, and the anonymous referee. The example in § 5.2 was worked out with the help of Margarida Melo, Martin Ulirsch, and Filippo Viviani at the workshop on Foundations of Tropical Schemes at the American Institute of Mathematics. We thank them all heartily.

We are also grateful to the participants of the 2019 Intercity Geometry Seminar, organized by David Holmes, Chris Lazda, Adrien Sauvaget, and Arne Smeets for their feedback, from which this paper has benefited considerably.

A substantial part of this paper was written, and some of its results proven, during the Workshop on Tropical Varieties in Higher Dimensions and a subsequent research visit at the Intitut Mittag-Leffler in April, 2018. We gratefully acknowledge the Institute's hospitality during this period.

S.M. was supported by ERC-2017-AdG-786580-MACI. This project has received funding from the European Research Council (ERC) under the European Union Horizon 2020 research and innovation program (grant agreement no. 786580).

J.W. was supported by an NSA Young Investigator's grant, award number H98230-16-1-0329, a Simons Collaboration grant, award #636210, and a Simons Fellowship, award #822534.

References

AC14 D. Abramovich and Q. Chen, *Stable logarithmic maps to Deligne-Faltings pairs II*, Asian J. Math. **18** (2014), 465–488; MR 3257836.

AP20 A. Abreu and M. Pacini, *The universal tropical Jacobian and the skeleton of the Esteves' universal Jacobian*, Proc. Lond. Math. Soc. (3) **120** (2020), 328–369.

AK79 A. B. Altman and S. L. Kleiman, *Compactifying the Picard scheme. II*, Amer. J. Math. **101** (1979), 10–41; MR 527824.

AK80 A. B. Altman and S. L. Kleiman, *Compactifying the Picard scheme*, Adv. Math. **35** (1980), 50–112; MR 555258.

AC13 O. Amini and L. Caporaso, *Riemann–Roch theory for weighted graphs and tropical curves*, Adv. Math. **240** (2013), 1–23.

ABKS14 Y. An, M. Baker, G. Kuperberg and F. Shokrieh, *Canonical representatives for divisor classes on tropical curves and the matrix-tree theorem*, Forum Math. Sigma **2** (2014), e24, MR 3264262.

BN07 M. Baker and S. Norine, *Riemann-Roch and Abel-Jacobi theory on a finite graph*, Adv. Math. **215** (2007), 766–788; MR 2355607.

Bar20 L. J. Barrott, *Logarithmic Chow theory*, Preprint (2020), arXiv:1810.03746.

BV12 N. Borne and A. Vistoli, *Parabolic sheaves on logarithmic schemes*, Adv. Math. **231** (2012), 1327–1363; MR 2964607.

Cap94 L. Caporaso, *A compactification of the universal Picard variety over the moduli space of stable curves*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **7** (1994), 589–660; MR 1254134.

Cap08a L. Caporaso, *Compactified Jacobians, Abel maps and theta divisors*, in *Curves and abelian varieties*, Contemporary Mathematics, vol. 465 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2008), 1–23; MR 2457733.

Cap08b L. Caporaso, *Néron models and compactified Picard schemes over the moduli stack of stable curves*, Amer. J. Math. **130** (2008), 1–47; MR 2382140.

CCUW20 R. Cavalieri, M. Chan, M. Ulirsch and J. Wise, *A moduli stack of tropical curves*, Forum Math. Sigma **8** (2020), e23; MR 4091085.

Che14 Q. Chen, *Stable logarithmic maps to Deligne-Faltings pairs I*, Ann. of Math. (2) **180** (2014), 455–521; MR 3224717.

Chi15 A. Chiodo, *Néron models of Pic via Pic*, Preprint (2015), arXiv:1509.06483.

D'S79 C. D'Souza, *Compactification of generalised Jacobians*, Proc. Indian Acad. Sci. A **88** (1979), 419–457; MR 569548.

EGA A. Grothendieck and J. Dieudonné, *Éléments de géométrie algébrique*, Publ. Math. Inst. Hautes Études Sci. **4, 8, 11, 17, 20, 24, 28, 32** (1960, 1961, 1961, 1963, 1964, 1965, 1966, 1967).

Est01 E. Esteves, *Compactifying the relative Jacobian over families of reduced curves*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **353** (2001), 3045–3095; MR 1828599.

FRTU16 T. Foster, D. Ranganathan, M. Talpo and M. Ulirsch, *Logarithmic picard groups, chip firing, and the combinatorial rank*, Preprint (2016), arXiv:1611.10233.

Ful93 W. Fulton, *Introduction to toric varieties*, Annals of Mathematics Studies, vol. 131 (Princeton University Press, Princeton, NJ, 1993), The William H. Roever Lectures in Geometry; MR 1234037.

GK08 A. Gathmann and M. Kerber, *A Riemann-Roch theorem in tropical geometry*, Math. Z. **259** (2008), 217–230; MR 2377750.

Gri17 P. A. Grillet, *Semigroups: an introduction to the structure theory* (Routledge, 2017).

GS13 M. Gross and B. Siebert, *Logarithmic Gromov-Witten invariants*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **26** (2013), 451–510.

Gro95 A. Grothendieck, *Techniques de construction et théorèmes d'existence en géométrie algébrique. IV. Les schémas de Hilbert*, Séminaire Bourbaki, vol. 6 (Société Mathématique de France, Paris, 1995), 249–276, Exp. No. 221; MR 1611822.

Hah07 H. Hahn, *Über die nichtarchimedischen Größensysteme*, Wien. Ber. **116** (1907), 601–655 (in German).

Her19 L. Herr, *The log product formula*, Preprint (2019), arXiv:1908.04936.

Höl01 O. Hölder, *Die Axiome der Quantität und die Lehre vom Maß*, Ber. Verh. Sächs. Akad. Wiss. Leipzig Math. Phys. Kl. **53** (1901), 1–64.

Ill94 L. Illusie, *Logarithmic spaces (according to K. Kato)*, in *Barsotti Symposium in Algebraic Geometry*, eds V. Cristante and W. Messing, Perspectives in Mathematics, vol. 15 (Academic Press, 1994), 183–204.

Ish78 M.-N. Ishida, *Compactifications of a family of generalized Jacobian varieties*, in *Proceedings of the International Symposium on Algebraic Geometry (Kyoto Univ., Kyoto, 1977)* (Kinokuniya, Tokyo, 1978), 503–524; MR 578869.

Jar00 T. J. Jarvis, *Compactification of the universal Picard over the moduli of stable curves*, Math. Z. **235** (2000), 123–149; MR 1785075.

Kaj93 T. Kajiwara, *Logarithmic compactifications of the generalized Jacobian variety*, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo Sect. IA Math. **40** (1993), 473–502; MR 1255052.

KKN08a T. Kajiwara, K. Kato and C. Nakayama, *Analytic log Picard varieties*, Nagoya Math. J. **191** (2008), 149–180.

KKN08b T. Kajiwara, K. Kato and C. Nakayama, *Logarithmic abelian varieties*, Nagoya Math. J. **189** (2008), 63–138; MR 2396584.

KKN08c T. Kajiwara, K. Kato and C. Nakayama, *Logarithmic abelian varieties. I. Complex analytic theory*, J. Math. Sci. Univ. Tokyo **15** (2008), 69–193; MR 2422590.

KKN13 T. Kajiwara, K. Kato and C. Nakayama, *Logarithmic abelian varieties, III: Logarithmic elliptic curves and modular curves*, Nagoya Math. J. **210** (2013), 59–81; MR 3079275.

KKN15 T. Kajiwara, K. Kato and C. Nakayama, *Logarithmic abelian varieties, part IV: Proper models*, Nagoya Math. J. **219** (2015), 9–63.

Kat89 K. Kato, *Logarithmic structures of Fontaine-Illusie*, in *Algebraic analysis, geometry, and number theory (Baltimore, MD, 1988)* (Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore, MD, 1989), 191–224; MR 1463703.

Kat K. Kato, *Logarithmic degeneration and Dieudonné theory*, Unpublished manuscript.

Kat21 K. Kato, *Logarithmic structures of Fontaine-Illusie. II—Logarithmic flat topology*, Tokyo J. Math. **44** (2021), 125–155.

Kim10 B. Kim, *Logarithmic stable maps*, in *New developments in algebraic geometry, integrable systems and mirror symmetry (RIMS, Kyoto, 2008)*, Advanced Studies in Pure Mathematics, vol. 59 (Mathematical Society of Japan, Tokyo, 2010), 167–200; MR 2683209.

Li01 J. Li, *Stable morphisms to singular schemes and relative stable morphisms*, J. Differential Geom. **57** (2001), 509–578; MR 1882667.

Li02 J. Li, *A degeneration formula of GW-invariants*, J. Differential Geom. **60** (2002), 199–293; MR 1938113.

MW17 S. Marcus and J. Wise, *Logarithmic compactification of the Abel–Jacobi section*, Preprint (2017), arXiv:1708.04471

MR20 D. Maulik and D. Ranganathan, *Logarithmic Donaldson-Thomas theory*, Preprint (2020), arXiv:2006.06603.

Mel11 M. Melo, *Compactified Picard stacks over the moduli stack of stable curves with marked points*, Adv. Math. **226** (2011), 727–763.

MZ08 G. Mikhalkin and I. Zharkov, *Tropical curves, their Jacobians and theta functions*, in *Curves and abelian varieties*, Contemporary Mathematics, vol. 465 (American Mathematical Society, Providence, RI, 2008), 203–230; MR 2457739.

Nak17 C. Nakayama, *Logarithmic étale cohomology, II*, Adv. Math. **314** (2017), 663–725; MR 3658728.

OS79 T. Oda and C. S. Seshadri, *Compactifications of the generalized Jacobian variety*, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. **253** (1979), 1–90; MR 536936.

Ogu18 A. Ogus, *Lectures on logarithmic algebraic geometry*, Cambridge Studies in Advanced Mathematics, vol. 178 (Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2018); MR 3838359.

Ols04 M. C. Olsson, *Semistable degenerations and period spaces for polarized K3 surfaces*, Duke Math. J. **125** (2004), 121–203.

Pan96 R. Pandharipande, *A compactification over $\overline{M}_g$ of the universal moduli space of slope-semistable vector bundles*, J. Amer. Math. Soc. **9** (1996), 425–471; MR 1308406.

Ran20 D. Ranganathan, *Logarithmic Gromov-Witten theory with expansions*, Preprint (2020), arXiv:1903.09006.

SGA4(2) A. Grothendieck and J.-L. Verdier, *Conditions de finitude. Topos et sites fibrés. Application aux questions de passage à la limite*, in *Théorie des topos et cohomologie étale des schémas. Séminaire de Géométrie Algébrique du Bois-Marie 1963–1964 (SGA 4), vol. 2*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, vol. 270 (Springer, Berlin, 1972), dirigé par M. Artin, A. Grothendieck et J. L. Verdier. Avec la collaboration de N. Bourbaki, P. Deligne et B. Saint-Donat; MR 0354653.

SGA4(3) M. Artin, *Théorème de changement de base pour un morphisme propre*, in *Théorie des topos et cohomologie étale des schémas. Séminaire de Géométrie Algébrique du Bois-Marie 1963–1964 (SGA 4), vol 3*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, vol. 305 (Springer, Berlin, 1973), 79–131, dirigé par M. Artin, A. Grothendieck et J. L. Verdier. Avec la collaboration de P. Deligne et B. Saint-Donat; MR 0354654.

SGA7(1) A. Grothendieck, *Modèles de Néron et monodromie*, in *Groupes de monodromie en géométrie algébrique. Séminaire de Géométrie Algébrique du Bois-Marie 1967–1969 (SGA 7), vol. 1*, Lecture Notes in Mathematics, vol. 288 (Springer, Berlin, 1972), 313–523, dirigé par A. Grothendieck. Avec la collaboration de M. Raynaud et D. S. Rim; MR 0354656.

Sta18 The Stacks Project Authors, *Stacks Project*, https://stacks.math.columbia.edu, 2018.

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press

Samouil Molcho samouil.molcho@math.ethz.ch
ETH Zürich, Rämistrasse 101, CH-8092 Zürich, Switzerland

Jonathan Wise jonathan.wise@colorado.edu
University of Colorado, Campus Box 395, Boulder, CO 80309-0395, USA

https://doi.org/10.1112/S0010437X22007527 Published online by Cambridge University Press